

This is a very exciting moment. You're one BIG step closer to seeing your finished book!

Please review the following information as it pertains to your text file:

## BOOK INFO

TRIM: 7.5 X 9.25

FONT SELECTED:

FONT SIZE: 12

LEADING (LINE SPACING): 1.25

FACING:

## ADDITIONAL NOTES

Thank you!

We Agree! The Tomb Is Open—But What Comes Next?

**COMPARE**  
**The 2**  
**Most Prominent Gospels in**  
**CHRISTENDOM**



We Agree! The Tomb Is Open—But What Comes Next?

**COMPARE**  
**The 2**  
**Most Prominent Gospels in**  
**CHRISTENDOM**

**JESUS'S BIBLICAL GOSPEL,**  
The Message of the *Cross!* (**Gal. 6:14**)

**THE POPE'S CATHOLIC GOSPEL,**  
The Message of the *Eucharist!* (**CCC-1327**)

**GARY WESTGERDES**

XULON PRESS

Xulon Press  
2301 Lucien Way #415  
Maitland, FL 32751  
407.339.4217  
www.xulonpress.com



© 2020 by Gary Westgerdes

All rights reserved solely by the author. The author guarantees all contents are original and do not infringe upon the legal rights of any other person or work. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form without the permission of the author. The views expressed in this book are not necessarily those of the publisher.

Excerpts from the English translation of the *Catechism of the Catholic Church* for use in the United States of America copyright © 1994, United States of Catholic Conference, Inc.—Libreria Editrice Vaticana. Used with Permission. English translation of the Catechism of the Catholic Church: Modifications from the Editio Typica copyright © 1997, United States Conference of Catholic Bishops—Libreria Editrice Vaticana.

Unless otherwise indicated, Scripture quotations taken from the King James Version (KJV)—*public domain*.

Paperback ISBN-13: 978-1-6312-9598-0  
Ebook ISBN-13: 978-1-6312-9599-7



# CONTENTS

CHAPTER 1. Heaven and Those Who Want You to Go There . . . . .	1
CHAPTER 2. Heaven? Are You Sure? You Can Never Know That for Sure? . . . . .	9
CHAPTER 3. Two Views on the Assurance of Salvation. . . . .	15
CHAPTER 4. The Role of the Catechism of the Catholic Church. . . . .	61
CHAPTER 5. The Role of the Bible for Biblical Believers . . . . .	65
CHAPTER 6. Catholic or Christian and the Gospel Comparison . . . . .	75
CHAPTER 7. Compare the Emphasis on What is Preached: Catholicism or Christ	163
CHAPTER 8. Catholic Sacramentals . . . . .	169
CHAPTER 9. Veneration of Relics. . . . .	175
CHAPTER 10. Catholicism’s Virgin Mary . . . . .	191
CHAPTER 11. Fatima/Beacon of Hope . . . . .	205
CHAPTER 12. Holy Water. . . . .	233
CHAPTER 13. Christian Testimonies, Contemporary and from Scripture . . . . .	239
CHAPTER 14. Rome Sweet Home and Catholic Testimonies. . . . .	259
CHAPTER 15. A Final Look, Only One Can Be Right . . . . .	271





## INTRODUCTION

**G**ary was the second oldest of seven children, born and raised Catholic in his hometown of Coldwater, Ohio. Coldwater had a Catholic population of around 90 percent.

At age seven, Gary was born again as he trusted in Jesus for the forgiveness of his sins. Gary is an enlisted Navy veteran who served aboard the aircraft carrier *IKE*, CVN 69 USS Dwight D. Eisenhower, which was commissioned on October 18, 1977. He joined the Navy at age nineteen, and after wandering from God the Father, Gary, the prodigal son, returned home at age twenty-three for forgiveness, which was in January 1980.

Gary's BA degree is in Biblical Studies with minors in Pastoral Ministries and Christian Education. He graduated in 1992 from Summit Christian College, Ft. Wayne, Indiana, which then merged with Taylor University, also located in Indiana.

More recently, Gary is the founder of The Keys of Heaven Ministries.

For the purpose of this book, presenting the truths of God's Word and the teachings of the Catholic Church is Gary's desire, the goal being that a deeper understanding and a greater familiarity with the topics and views from both sides will develop. The book's intent is to honestly present the information without error, which Gary believes has been accomplished. Gary's hope is that you will find the book a compelling read that may lead you to decisions for eternal truth, eternal life, and everlasting reward.

Gary's greatest joy is to let God speak for Himself and to present the Catholic teachings in the same way. However, comments, explanations, and some apologetics are at times necessary and helpful.



## ***AUTHORS AND MINISTRIES QUOTED OR MENTIONED***

**About Catholics**, a Catholic blog on faith and life. Sharing Catholics beliefs and teachings—Catholicism 101.

**Akin, Jimmy**, a convert to the Catholic faith with background in bible, theology, Church Fathers, philosophy, canon law, and liturgy. Author, speaker, and senior apologist at Catholic Answers with more than twenty-five years of experience in defending and explaining the Catholic faith. He appears weekly on radio with *Catholic Answers Live*.

**Ashley, William, “Billy” Sunday**, (deceased 1862–1935) was a popular outfielder in the National Baseball League in the 1880s. Afterward, he was a celebrated and influential American evangelist for twenty years.

***Arlington Catholic Herald***, the official newspaper of the Roman Catholic Diocese of Arlington supporting the Church’s mission to evangelize by providing news from a Catholic perspective.

**Ayre, Harrison**, a Canadian priest who started the trending Twitter hashtag #celibacy-matters. He serves at Holy Family Notre Dame parish in Port Alberni, British Columbia.

**Barbour, Hugh**, a Norbertine priest of St. Michael’s Abbey and a convert from the Episcopal Church. He began his chaplaincy at Catholic Answers in 2017.

**Barron, Bishop Robert**, the founder of Word on Fire, a global media ministry, designed to “draw people into or back to the Catholic Faith.” An acclaimed author, speaker, and theologian.

**Beaumont, Douglas**, a former evangelical Protestant who authored the book *The Message Behind the Movie* (Moody, 2009) and is editor of *Evangelical Exodus: Evangelical Seminarians and Their Paths to Rome* (Ignatius Press, 2016).

**Buechi, Patrick J.**, Staff Reporter for *Western New York Catholic* (WNY Catholic) newspaper.

**CATHOLIC Answers/Press**, A media company sharing what the Church really teaches. The world's largest source for reliable information about doctrine, tradition, and beliefs.

**Catholic.net**, founded by James Mulholland in 1955, "to help Catholics form a Christ-like character" thus transforming the world's cultures "with the Truth of the Gospel transmitted to us by Holy Mother Church." [catholic.net/op/about-us.html](http://catholic.net/op/about-us.html).

**Catholic Online School**, calls itself the "World's Catholic Library."

**Catholic Response Inc.**, "presents the Truths of the Catholic Faith by simple means." Explanations of Catholic issues available in Online Pamphlets.

**Christian Post** an online news publication with news stories and information updated daily from a nondenominational/evangelical Christian worldview.

**ChurchPOP**, a Christian culture brand that is fun, informative, and inspirational. Part of the EWTN network and is under the spiritual patronage of Our Lady of Perpetual Help.

**Daniels, David W.**, of Chick Publications is an author, bible researcher and linguist. Chick is a Ministry of evangelism which promotes the authority of God's Word that is under constant attack. He is trained in bible and linguistics with a B.A. and M.Div. He upholds the KJV bible as "God's preserved words in English."

**Dunn, Matt**, studied at Delaware County Community College and Temple University. Now serving at Ascension Press since 2014.

**Dwyer, Claire**, an unapologetically Catholic mother with six children, who delights in the sacramentality of daily life. She contributes regularly to the [WomenofGrace.com](http://WomenofGrace.com).

**Ewing, Jeannie**, a Catholic spirituality writer focused on topics about moving through grief, the value of redemptive suffering, and how to wait for God's timing fruitfully. A frequent guest on Catholic radio and contributes to online and printed Catholic periodicals. <sup>1</sup>

**Fagnant-MacArthur, Patrice**, Senior Editor with Catholic Lane.com and blogs at <http://spiritualwomanthoughts.blogspot.com>. Musings concerning life, readings, and a relationship with God.

**Fay, Monsignor William P.**, General Secretary United States Conference of Catholic Bishops.

**Frye, Peggy**, a staff apologist at Catholic Answers. Author of *101 Quick Questions with Catholic Answers: Sexuality*, 2011.

**Gillen, Priest Kevin Gabriel, OP**, the host of the weekly radio program *Word to Life* and the executive director of the Dominican Friars Foundation. “The Dominican friars promote the Rosary as a spiritual weapon ... in a way that is most effective to combat the moral and spiritual evils of our day.”<sup>2</sup>

**Goodwill, Dave**, a former homosexual, and a brother in Christ. We and others shared our written testimonies around the neighborhood of our church.

**Greydanus, Steven D.**, permanent deacon in the Archdiocese of Newark and film critic for the National Catholic Register. Creator of DecentFilms.com.

**Grodi, Marcus C.**, 1992 convert from a Protestant pastoral ministry. Author, speaker, and president of *the Coming Home Network*. Host of *The Journey Home Program* seen on EWTN.

**Grondin, Charles R.**, Priest ordained in 2003. Appointed to Blessed Sacrament Parish in Providence, RI in 2012.

**Guzman, Sam**, author, and editor of *The Catholic Gentleman*.

**Hahn, Dr. Scott**, former Presbyterian, speaks concerning Scripture and the Catholic faith. Teaching at Franciscan University of Steubenville since 1990. Founded Saint Paul Center for Biblical Theology and is still serving as president.

**Hardon, John A., S.J.** (deceased), an ordained priest who entered the Society of Jesus, Jesuits, in 1936. “Always a faithful son of the Church.” Authored over 200 books and was a consultant for the drafting of the Catechism of the Catholic Church.

**Hater, Robert J.**, as authored over 25 books, a diocesan priest in Cincinnati who has lectured on Catholic evangelization since the 1970’s.

**Heinlein, Michael**, editor of *Simply Catholic* and former editor of *The Catholic Answer* magazine.

**Hoffman, Francis**, an ordained Priest in 1992. Orthodox and articulate. Member of *Opus Dei*. Noted Author, speaker, and doctorate in Canon Law.

**Hunt, Dave** (deceased), author and establisher of *The Berean Call* in 1985.

**Kresta, Al**, Catholic broadcaster, journalist, and author. Former evangelical pastor, now the president and CEO of Ave Maria Radio. Host of, *Kresta in the Afternoon*, syndicated on EWTN Global Catholic Radio.

**Lemmel, Helen**, the daughter of a Wesleyan Methodist pastor. Born in England and arriving in the U.S. at the age of twelve. She loved music, giving concerts and taught voice at two Bible Institutes.

**Lennartz, Mark**, former Catholic, friend and brother in Christ.

**Lighthouse Trails Inc.**, publishing company, founded by David and Deborah Dombrowski. Spreading “The Gospel of Jesus Christ—that Jesus died on the Cross to pay the penalty for man’s sins and that He arose on the 3rd day and has offered salvation freely to whosoever will come to Him.” Jesus “is the only means of eternal salvation for any person.”<sup>3</sup>

**Lovasik, Rev. Lawrence G., SVD**, served as a missionary priest, a teacher and preached parish missions. “His life’s ideal was to make God more known and loved through his writings.” He published over 30 books, including children bible stories.

**McCann, Mark C.**, with more than 30 years-experience in ministry to children, youth, and families. He is an author and Ministry consultant with a BA degree in Theology.

**McMahon, T. A.**, Christian author, and current director of The Berean Call ministry.

**Millegan, Brantly**, former Protestant since 2010. Founder and editor-in-chief of ChurchPOP. A graduate of Wheaton College, the so-called “Harvard of evangelical schools.”

**Nash, Tom**, apologist and speaker for Catholic Answers, blogger for the National Catholic Register, contributes to Catholic World Report and with over 25 years of experience that included a stint of 8 as theology advisor to EWTN.

**National Catholic Register**, conservative national Catholic newspaper since 1927 currently owned by EWTN.

**NewAdvent.org**, connects online contents of the Catholic Church as a digital download, such as, Catholic Encyclopedia, Church Fathers, Summa, Bible etc.

**Nix, Priest David**, was an EMT and paramedic. A high school graduate of Regis Jesuit High School and Boston College. He is the first FOCUS missionary ordained priest (2010). Among his passions are, languages, the missions, the end of trafficking and especially the pro-life cause.

**O’Connor, Francine M.** (deceased), was a managing editor of Liguorian magazine and author of many Catholic children’s books.

**O’ Malley, Dr. Timothy P.**, expert in the areas of liturgical and sacramental theology, catechesis, and spirituality. Director of the Notre Dame Center for Liturgy. Author of, *Bored Again Catholic: How the Mass Could Save Your Life*.<sup>4</sup>

**Ordway, Holly**, converted from atheism to Catholicism. Professor of English and director of the Master of Arts in Apologetics program at Houston Baptist University. Author of her memoir: *Not God’s Type: An Atheist Academic Lays Down Her Arms* (Ignatius, 2014).

**Our Charisms**, the first out of seven, *Ongoing Conversion* by notable professor and chair of Biblical Theology, Dr. Scott Hahn.

**Pacwa, Mitch, S.J.**, American Jesuit priest fluent in thirteen languages. Celebrates liturgy in both the Roman and Maronite rites. President and founder of Ignatius Productions. TV/radio host at EWTN. Author of *Saved*.

**Phillips, Francis**, reviews books for the *Catholic Herald*.

**Pivonka, David**, Franciscan priest and nationally known preacher and evangelist. Seventh president of *The Franciscan University of Steubenville*, whose mission “embraces the call to dynamic orthodoxy,” and whose vision is “*To become the leading instrument for worldwide renewal at the service of the Catholic Church.*” Always focusing on the spirit of St. Francis of Assisi’s divine call to “rebuild my Church.” (*emphasis added*)

**Pontiff Benedict XVI**, Sovereign of the Vatican 2005–2013. Ordained a priest 1951, a highly regarded theologian and a university professor of theology.

**Pontiff Francis**, Sovereign of the Vatican 2013–present. He encouraged world leaders to prevent the idolatry of excessive monetary ambitions, which would then provide needed welfare aid. Ordained a priest in 1969 taking his Jesuit vow in 1973.

**Pontiff John Paul II**, Sovereign of the Vatican 1978–2005. Successful in ending communism and in building bridges with peoples of other faiths.

**Pontiff Pius X**, Sovereign of the Vatican 1903–1914, vigorously opposed modernizing Catholic doctrinal interpretations.

**Richert, Scott P.**, Publisher for Our Sunday Visitor and former Editor at Large for Chronicles Magazine.

**Rodgers, Adrian** (deceased), pastor of Bellevue Baptist Church of Memphis, Tennessee. Founded Love Worth Finding Ministries in 1987, still aired on TV and through ministry App. Served as a three term President of the Southern Baptist Convention.

**Rotty, Derek**, converted to the Catholic Church in 2004. Author of, *A Life of Conversion: Meeting Christ in the Gospels*, published in 2019. Director of Evangelization & Discipleship at St. Mary’s Catholic Church, Jackson, TN.

**Ryland, Priest Ray, Ph.D., J.D.**, (deceased) a converted married Episcopal clergyman with five children, joining the Catholic Church in 1963. Ordained a priest in 1983 with a dispensation from celibacy. Served with Catholic Answers, Franciscan University of Steubenville, and Coming Home Network.

**Sabat, Patrick**, Program Director of the Fatima Tour for Peace. Born in the Philippines in the Tarlac diocese. He holds a BA degree from Our Lady of Peace College in Philosophy which he taught at the Tarlac State University. He also took master studies at the Jesuit-run university of Ateneo de Manila in Philosophy.

**Saunders, Priest William**, ordained 1984. Founder of Our Lady of Hope Catholic Church, Potomac Falls, Virginia. Professor of catechetics and theology for the Notre Dame Graduate School of Christendom College.

**Schreck, Dr. Alan**, professor of theology at Franciscan University of Steubenville, specializing in Catholic doctrine, history, and Vatican II. Author of most notably *Catholic and Christian*.

**Scott, Joe, CPS**, a Roman Catholic Paulist priest, author of *Busted Halo* where he answers questions with the motto: faith shared joyfully.

**Sheen, Archbishop Fulton J.** (deceased), author, religious, leader and evangelist. Served as a Roman Catholic Priest and famous for his television series *Life Is Worth Living*.<sup>5</sup>

**Simply Catholic**, A ministry of *Our Sunday Visitor* headed by Michael Heinlein.

**Sobiek, Mary Jo**, a Dominican nun, the theology teacher at Marian Catholic High School.

**Stack Exchange network** consists of 175 Q&A communities including **Stack Overflow**, the largest, most trusted online community for developers to learn, share knowledge, and build their careers.

**Stechschulte, Rev. Barry**, originally from Minster, Ohio, ordained to the priesthood on May 23, 2009. Served for three years at Holy Trinity Parish in Coldwater, Ohio, currently at Holy Rosary since 2012 and at St. Patrick in Glynwood since 2014.

**St. Teresa of Avila** (deceased), born in 1515 in Avila, Spain. She is the patron saint of headache sufferers. She lived during the times of Christopher Columbus and Martin Luther's Reformation. "Out of all of this change came Teresa pointing the way from outer turmoil to inner peace." <sup>6</sup>

**The Berean Call**, formed, in 1985 under the direction of Dave Hunt and joined by T. A. McMahon, for encouraging spiritual discernment. Regarding themselves, not only as "evangelicals" but as *biblical* Christians. Their primary publication is a newsletter: *The Berean Call*.

**Thigpen, Paul**, "A best-selling author and award-winning journalist, Dr. Thigpen has published thirty-five books and more than five hundred journal and magazine articles in more than forty religious and secular periodicals for both scholarly and popular audiences. His work has been circulated worldwide and translated into twelve languages." <sup>7</sup>

**Thomas, Paul**, an ordained Priest, wrote "My Ticket to Heaven."

**Todd, Paul**, from Russels Point, Ohio, a well-versed Catholic who responded to several of my articles in 1982, which were written to the editor of our local newspaper *The Daily Standard*, Celina, Ohio.

**Tomczak, Larry**, author of *Clap Your Hands! A Young Catholic Encounters Christ*. Next to God's word, Larry's explanation and sharing of the gospel, with his Father, was instrumental in God bringing Gary Westgerdes back home to his heavenly Father.



**Begin your journey and remember that God is love.**

*His compassions fail not. They are new every morning.* (Lam. 3:22, 23)

Make sure your keys will open the door to heaven. <sup>8</sup>

Please note that through-out the book italics have been used in the scripture quotations for added emphasis.



## DEDICATION

**TO** the GOD who drew me, convicted me, enlightened me, forgave me, saved me, sealed me, and never lets me go.

**TO** my second-grade Catholic catechism teacher, God bless her, who read John 3:16 to our class: “For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.”

**TO** the Catholic Navy Chaplain/Priest who referred me to the Protestant Bible study with the Navigators because no Catholic Bible study was available.

**TO** my Navy friends and especially Larry W., who in 1980, the Lord used to bring me back home to my heavenly Father.

**TO** My dear wife Victoria who prays for me and worries about me during my late nights on the computer.



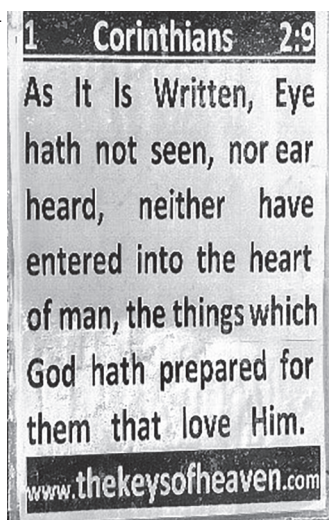
## Chapter One

# HEAVEN AND THOSE WHO WANT YOU TO GO THERE

**T**his chapter begins with 1 Corinthians 2:9 that is displayed on the bumper of my car. I use it as a seed planter to get people to think about their love for God and eternity. First Corinthians 2:10 lets believers know that we can and should know what God has prepared for us.

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered-into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. (King James Version, 1 Cor. 2:9)

But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit. (1 Cor. 2:10)



Jesus revealed an aspect of heaven while speaking with a group of Jewish religious leaders called the Sadducees, *they are sad you see*, because they do not believe in the resurrection. The Sadducees were trying to confuse Jesus by quoting Moses, aka the scriptures. They asked him a question concerning the law of Moses and marriage.

Master, Moses said, if a man, die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother: Likewise, the second

also ... unto the seventh. And last of all the woman died also. Therefore, in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? For they all had her. (Matt. 22:24–28)

Now listen closely to Jesus's answer.

*Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.*

For in the resurrection *they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.*

But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? *God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.*

And when *the multitude* heard this, *they were astonished at his doctrine.* (Matt. 22:29–33)

Now before an individual can enter heaven and become as the angels, Jesus explains in the gospel of John, about our need of a relationship with him as our Savior. Apostle Paul confirms Jesus's message, writing under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit concerning our heavenly destination.

But now they desire a better country, that is, *an, heavenly*: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for *he hath prepared for them a city.* (Heb. 11:16)

Jesus comforted his followers and assured them of his plans.

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare *a place for you.* And if I go to prepare a place for you, *I will come again,* and receive you unto myself; *that where I am, there ye*

*may be also ... I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:1–3)*

The book of Revelation assures us that a blessing will be received by those who read, hear, and keep the things written therein. Chapters 21 and 22 of Revelation contain “those things,” which God has prepared for those who love him.

*Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: For the time is at hand. (Rev. 1:3)*

*I saw a New Heaven and a New Earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away ... there was no more Sea ... I John saw the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, as a bride adorned for her husband ... I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, The Tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God, shall Wipe Away All Tears from their eyes; and there shall be no More Death ... Sorrow ... Crying, neither ... any More Pain for the former things, are passed away ... he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all Things New ... Write, for these words are true and faithful ... he said unto me, It, is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning, and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of The Fountain of The Water of Life Freely. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my Son ... And there came unto me one of the seven angels ... saying, Come, hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb’s wife. And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem. Descending out of heaven from God ... And I saw no temple therein: for The Lord God Almighty and The Lamb are The Temple of it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for The Glory of God did Lighten it, and The Lamb is the Light thereof. And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. And the gates of it shall not be shut*

at all by day: for there shall be *no Night* there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. And there shall in *no Wise Enter into it anything that Defileth*, neither whatsoever *Worketh abomination, or Maketh a Lie: but they which are Written* in the Lamb's book of life. (Rev. 21:1–7, 9–11, 22–27)

And he shewed me *a Pure River of Water of Life*, clear as crystal, proceeding out of *The Throne of God and of The Lamb*. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there *The Tree of Life*, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for *the Healing of The Nations*. And there shall be *no More Curse*: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: And they shall see his face; and *his name shall be in their foreheads*. And there shall be *no Night* there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun' for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever ... *Blessed are they that do his Commandments, that they may have right to The Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City*. For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star. And the Spirit and the bride say, *Come*. And let him that heareth say, *Come*. And let Him that is athirst *Come*. And whosoever will, let him *take the Water of Life Freely* ... The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen." (Rev. 22:1–6, 14–17, 21)

And this is *his commandment*, that, we should *believe on the name of his son Jesus Christ, and love one another*, as he gave us commandment. (1 John 3:23)

To those who desire salvation, eternal life and the knowledge of the works required, Jesus gives a direct answer.

What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? Jesus answered ... *This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent ...* And this is the will of him that sent me, that everyone which seeth the Son, and *believeth* on him, may *have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.* (John 6:28–29, 40)

Next, this place, heaven, is also called a “paradise,” and believing in Christ is the way to get in. Second Corinthians 12:4, Revelation 2:7, and Luke 23:34, 42–43 each describe heaven as a paradise.

Jesus: Verily I say unto thee, *today*, shalt thou be with me in *paradise*.  
(Luke 23:43)

And from the book of Psalms, we learn that when we need help, the God in heaven is the only one we need.

Whom have I in heaven but thee? And there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee. My flesh and my heart faileth: but *God, is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever.* For, lo, they that are far from thee shall perish: thou hast destroyed all them that go a whoring from thee. But it is good for me to draw near to God: *I have put my trust in the Lord God, that I may declare all thy works.* (Ps. 73:25–28)

## **THOSE WHO WANT YOU TO GO TO HEAVEN**

*God the Father, who in the Gospel of Luke gives a glimpse of his heart.*

A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living ... And when he came to himself, he said ... I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee ... And he arose and came to his



father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And *the son said* unto him, *Father, I have sinned* against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But *the Father said* to his servants, *bring, forth the best robe*, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; *and let us eat, and be merry*: For this *my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found*. And they began to *be merry*. (Luke 15:11–13, 17–18, 20–24)

*God the Son, Jesus, calls us to himself with a loving knock*

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man, *hear my voice, and open the door*, I will come into him, and will sup with him, and he with me. (Rev. 3:20)

*Come unto me*, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and *learn of me*; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall *find rest unto your souls*. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light. (Matt. 11:28–30)

*God the Son, Jesus, was crucified, and then commissions and sends the Church*

Thus, *it is written*, and thus *it behooved Christ to \*suffer, and to \*rise from the dead the third day: and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name* among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And *ye are witnesses* of these things. (Luke 24:44–48)

*Then said Jesus* to them again, *Peace be unto you*: as my Father hath sent me, even so *send I you* ... And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: But these are written, that ye might *believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.*” (John 20:21, 30–31)

*God the Holy Spirit and the bride (the Church)*

And the Spirit and the bride say, *COME*. And let him that heareth say, *COME*. And let him that is athirst *COME*. And whosoever will, let him *take the water of life freely*. (Rev. 22:17)

*The Angels and all of Heaven*

I (Jesus) say unto you, *there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth*.

It was meet that we should *make merry and be glad*: for your brother was *dead and is alive again and was lost and is found*. (Luke 15:10, 32)

*Former Haters and Persecutors of Christians*

Although, I (Apostle Paul) was *before a blasphemer, and a persecutor and injurious*: but *I obtained mercy* because *I did it ignorantly in unbelief*. And the grace of our Lord was exceedingly abundant, with faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief. Howbeit, for this cause, *I obtained mercy, that in me, first Jesus Christ* might shew forth all longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting. (1 Tim. 1:13–16)

*Deceased Loved Ones who may have gone to hell*

There was a certain rich man ... And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus ... it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he, lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son ... Between us and you there is a great gulf fixed ... Then he

(the rich man) said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest *send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.* Abraham saith unto him, *they, have Moses and the prophets* (Old Testament Scriptures); let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father, Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they, will repent. And he said unto him, *If, they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead.* (Luke 16:19–20, 22–31)

Do you believe? Have you been persuaded?

*Be not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was \*crucified: he is \*risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.* (Mark 16:6)



## Chapter Two

# HEAVEN? ARE YOU SURE? YOU CAN NEVER KNOW THAT FOR SURE?

**A** Catholic priest or church leader told me that you can never be assured of your salvation until after you are dead. This Catholic teaching is based on the belief that you can never know, while you are alive, if you have been “good enough” or not to go to heaven.

Chapter 3 shows or proves that this belief is the official and prevalent teaching of the Catholic Church. The Catholic Church calls assurance of salvation, the *sin of presumption*.

Here are two responses from Catholic Answers concerning the “Sin of Presumption.”<sup>9</sup>

“What Is the Sin of Presumption?”

“It may be defined as the condition of a soul that, because of a badly regulated reliance on God’s mercy and power, hopes for salvation without doing anything to deserve it.” —*Priest Vincent Serpa O.P., old Catholic Encyclopedia*

“The Sin of Presumption?”

Q. 1183. What is presumption?

A. Presumption is a rash expectation of salvation without making proper use of the necessary means to obtain it.” —*Priest Charles Grodin, The Baltimore Catechism*  
Westgerdes, in English, this means that you need Catholicism.

You cannot ask Jesus directly for the forgiveness of your sins.

You can never know that you have received God’s gift of everlasting life.

You are presuming to have received salvation without receiving the proper sacraments entrusted to the Catholic Church and administered through her priesthood.

Your good works and acts of penance can never be totally completed unless you have reached sainthood and have no need of purgatory.

You can never be 100% sure that you are going to heaven, no way, nada, do not even think about it!

The common mind-set seems to be, relax, obey the Church, and she will lead or bring you to Christ. Catholics believe and teach that God gives the grace needed for salvation through the Church’s Sacraments. However, God says in his Word, it is through faith.

For by grace are ye saved through *faith*; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Eph. 2:8, 9)

In contrast, what Catholics hear, concerning salvation is the Church’s Sacraments.

For by grace are ye saved through the sacraments; being administered by the Catholic Priesthood, established by God: part of your work to achieve salvation is the reception of the sacraments. Let no man boast of being saved through faith in Christ without the need of the Catholic Church.

## THE SCRIPT OF GARY’S TESTIMONY VIDEO—AUG. 10, 2009. <sup>10</sup>

**Pastor:** All right, well, we are here with Gary Westgerdes, and he is going to be sharing, talking about your testimony, how you met Jesus, and how did this all begin, where do we start?

**Gary:** I would say it began back when I was six or seven years old. I do not remember the exact year. But I grew up in the Catholic Church, and they had been teaching us about sin and guilt and heaven and hell, and the Lord was working on my heart. I

was feeling guilty for whatever I was doing, I do not remember exactly. I just remember in catechism class one year or day, the teacher, I don't remember what she was teaching scripturally, shared John 3:16. "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son that whosoever believeth in him should not perish but have everlasting life."



After she shared that I believed that, if I put my trust in Christ, he'd forgive me of my sins, and God gave me the assurance that they were forgiven, that I was going to be in heaven with him, and that was fantastic. I went home a very happy little person.

So, the priest came, church leaders and a priest, came up to the house to have the house dedicated to the Sacred Hearts of Mary and Jesus, where they put the statues on the wall. And he seen me and I was pretty happy that day, and he asked me why I was so happy, so I told him, "Because I am going to heaven when I die." He just kind of chuckled and laughed at me, and said, "Oh, *you can never know that for sure* until after you're dead because you never know if you'd been good enough or not." And as you can imagine that put me in some great shock.

And, I remember, I don't know if it was after it was over, or if it was immediately, but I remember looking around the house at my brothers and sister arguing, and my mother was talking to someone (my younger brother). My parents had seven kids in seven years so I was about six or seven, so they might have all been around by then already. Ha! Ha! I remember looking at them and saying, "Well, if you have to be good enough to get to heaven, there's nobody in this family going to make it." Ha! Ha!

**Pastor:** Wow.

**Gary:** So, I just kind of hoped that, that was false. The whole time I was growing up, I didn't really believe in everything the Catholic Church taught, but I was still raised Catholic and went to the sacraments and all that kind of stuff, but uh, I still was trying to be good. My mother said I was a pretty good kid growing up.



But, later-on after high school, going into the Navy, I started getting away, going the

way of the world, doing normal things that people and other Catholics you know have done. Ha! Ha!

And while I was in the Navy, I started jogging, and I was feeling really good, real healthy, and I really enjoyed it and after one of my runs—I remember telling God—“This is really great; I think this is what I would enjoy doing for the rest of my life.” Ha! Ha! And ah, but he had other plans.

And, shortly after that, I developed a blood clot in my leg and it was about three weeks before they finally discovered it, the doctor (and corpsman). They rushed me to the hospital right away and did the tests, and I had a blood clot, some of which had broken loose and gone through (my heart and into my lungs). And that caused me to start thinking about what would have happened to me if I had died.

Then, after I got out of the hospital, I went to the library. I started reading God’s Word and met a (new) friend at my new duty station, who had asked me if I was worried about my leg. I said, “No, I know God can work everything out for the good,” and then he said, “Oh, you’re a Christian?” And I said, “I wasn’t sure,” so he invited me to his church.

**Pastor:** “What kind of church did he go to?”

**Gary:** In Virginia, it was a pretty large church, charismatic type, and they had an altar call for people who wanted to come forward to receive Christ, and I didn’t go forward because in my heart I thought I already was a Christian. And so, they had a second altar call for people who wanted to come forward for prayer, so I went forward for that, but no one came to pray with me. And afterward, the friend that brought me told me to read the Gospel of John and the book of Revelation.

So, I had gone back and read that during the week, and I got to reading 1 John by mistake and in there the only verse that popped out at me was the one that said, “He who sins is of the devil” (*1 John 3:8*), and the Lord was convicting me of my sin. When I read that, I knew that if I was of the devil, I was headed for hell.

And I kept going back there for the next two more days to read the same thing, hoping I would see something different, but the Lord kept on bringing that verse to my heart. And I remember crying out to God, asking myself, “Well, if I’m just going to hell when I die,” you know, “life isn’t worth living.”

So, but I kept on, you know, hoping or I don’t remember exactly now, but later on in the week, my friend invited me to go with him to a bookstore, and he picked out a couple of books for me to read and invited me to go to church with him again that weekend, but to an evening service. It was Saturday evening, but I just decided to stay back and

read the books. The one book had the person’s testimony in it. And then, there he was sharing his testimony with his father. And he shared Ephesians 2:8–9: “For by grace are you saved not by works;” then I knew it was a free gift of God and not something you had to earn, and it wasn’t through good works. And that what I had learned when I was ... six or seven years old was really true, that I could be saved just through faith in Christ.

I started to get brave when I got older, in my early twenties, after I got out of the Navy and came back home. I found a church in Celina to go to, and I thought it was time to try to start dating, and so I dated, you know. I do not know if I dated them or if I just found one, I liked, but then I did not date them. Ha! Ha! But anyhow, I came to a point where I was just, I really wanted to marry someone who was a former Catholic, so we could work together in the ministry. There was one girl I dated who was a former Catholic, but I wanted to start out with a family. I was kind of looking for someone who already had children, and so I just prayed to God that I wanted to marry someone who already had children. I was, you know, a Christian of course, a former Catholic. I was looking more for maybe a widow at that time than a divorcee, but uh, I just felt, I prayed that to God. Then I prayed I would like to have someone who had their house paid for already, and God just worked it out. I think just, uh, I felt a real peace in my heart.



And a couple of weeks later, I started a singles Bible study, and there were-actually-like three girls there, ladies there at that age and each one was a divorcee with children. Vicky was the only former Catholic, and I liked her, and she liked me. Ha! Ha! but it was about, oh, probably five months later before I asked her out for our first date. And we kind of, it was an answer to prayer, and we just kind a stuck it out through all these years together. Ha! Ha!

After we got married, I went to Bible college to use my VA benefits to study scripture and stuff, so that was big. It took me six and a half years to get my four-year degree. Ha! Ha!





A couple years ago (2007) when I had a couple seizures I thought God was giving me a wake-up call, and (that I should) try to go out and start to share the gospel more, so that was kind of big, too, so that's why I'm more determined to share the gospel this time.



### Chapter Three

## TWO VIEWS ON THE ASSURANCE OF SALVATION

**T**his chapter delves deep into the teachings on the assurance of everlasting life. Can we know for sure that we are saved and totally forgiven while we are still living here on Earth?

*“Friend, eternity’s too long to be wrong.” —Adrian Rodgers*

Jesus gives three witnesses to the fact that a believer in him will not perish but have eternal life.

And as Moses *lifted-up the serpent* in the wilderness, even so must the *son of man be lifted-up*: that *whosoever believeth in him should, not perish, but have eternal life*. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that *whosoever believeth in him should, not perish, but have everlasting life*. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might *be saved*. He that *believeth on him is not condemned*: but he that *believeth not is condemned* already, *because he hath not believed in the name* of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:14–18)



## **LOVE WORTH FINDING—“A TESTIMONY FROM FRANK”—A LONG-TIME INMATE**

“I’ve been listening to Adrian Rodgers for six or seven years. God used his preaching so very much to turn a cold hard heart from sin. I came to prison thinking I was a Christian. One day, I had it in my heart to end it all by taking my own life. But all I could think about was Pastor Rodgers’s words, ‘*Friend, eternity’s too long to be wrong.*’ Well, I fell on my knees and truly cried out, ‘Help me!’ Needless-to-say, He’s a God of His Word. Amen. He saved me that day.” (*emphasis added*)

In the following three articles Catholic apologists are trying to convince readers that assurance of your eternal salvation is not possible and unscriptural.

**Number One**, Paul Thigpen—“Are You Saved? A Catholic Response to a Common Protestant Question” <sup>11</sup>

### **Thigpen**

“That’s a question often heard from well-meaning Christians who want to help others know Jesus Christ. As Catholics whose faith is centered in Him.”

Is the Catholic faith centered on Christ? The catechism mentions Mary as being inseparable from Jesus in their work for the salvation of souls (CCC-1172). The Catholic Church, as well, continues to teach that the belief of Christ in the Eucharist is the culmination of Catholic worship (CCC-1324). Though Catholics consider the Eucharist to be Jesus in the flesh, they are not centered on the Jesus who died and rose victorious over sin and death like the “well-meaning Christians.” Catholics are focused on their definition of Jesus in the Eucharist, who is still offering himself for the sins of the world at each Mass. The Mass is the *center* of the Catholic Faith, for the Catholic Church’s leaders *alone*, have the “keys of the kingdom of heaven.”

The following article shows the clear difference between the well-meaning Christian’s view of Jesus’s victory and the Catholic view of, “we’re not there yet.”

“Explaining Catholicism”<sup>12</sup>

“Q. *How do you explain Catholicism to non-Catholic friends, including the crucifix?* Jeanne Lunasco, Ewa Beach, Hawaii”



“A. Start with the crucifix. It’s the central symbol of the Catholic faith. It always reminds us of the agonizing death Our Lord willingly accepted to cleanse us from our sins. Gazing upon the crucifix reminds us of the horror of our sins ... That gaze can strengthen our resolve to avoid sin and thereby *free Our Lord from further suffering.*” (emphasis added) —*Priest Ray Ryland, Catholic Answers*

For further reading: Catholic Answers Forums, “Ignorant Question No. 1: Why does Our Lord Jesus still suffer for us?”<sup>13</sup>

**Thigpen**

“We can appreciate their good intentions and admire their willingness to talk about God ... What exactly do people mean when they talk of being already ‘saved’?”

This next source does a good job of answering Thigpen’s question.

“Are ... Protestants Saved?”<sup>14</sup>

“Q. ... Protestants all seem to teach that all you need to do to be saved is accept Christ into your heart with faith and you’ll be saved regardless what you do after that ... F. R. Oakdale, Minn.

A. Protestants generally believe one is saved by true conversion to Christ. But if one who has given his life to Christ does not live a Christian life,

they assume that person had not truly submitted to Christ.” —*Priest Ray Ryland, Catholic Answers*

This a good and correct answer by a well-respected Catholic Publication, *The Catholic Answers Magazine*, Editor, March 2019.

“Dear Friend ... As you know, it’s a one-of-a-kind publication. I’m aware of no other magazine in English devoted to publishing informative, insightful articles of Catholic apologetics.” —**Tim Ryland**

### **Thigpen**

“Christians with this query often view salvation as a past event that took place when they made a confession of faith in Jesus as Savior and Lord.”

All biblical Christians view salvation as a past event. All Christians view their salvation as a past event. Some individuals who call themselves Christians do not view their salvation as a past event because they have proclaimed it with their mouth substituting a sincere faith based on scripture with works and the sacrament of water baptism.

*Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.* (Rom. 10:17)

That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, *and shalt believe in thine heart* that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man *believeth unto righteousness*; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, Whosoever, *believeth on him* shall not be ashamed. (Rom. 10:9–11)

A better statement would be that they placed their faith in Jesus as Savior and Lord and put no confidence in their flesh, meaning their good works or religion. In Apostle Paul’s case, it was Judaism—as *Paul shares in his testimony*

For we ... *worship God in the spirit*, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, *and have no confidence in the flesh* ... If any other man thinketh that he hath

whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more: Circumcised ... of Israel ... of the tribe of Benjamin ... an Hebrew ... a Pharisee ... zeal, persecuting the church ... righteousness ... in the law, blameless. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things *but* loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom *I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung*, that I may win *Christ*, and be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through *the faith of Christ*, the righteousness which is of God by *faith*. (Phil. 3:3–9)

*By grace are ye saved through faith; and not of yourselves: it (the grace of salvation) is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast.* For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. (Eph. 2:8–10)

*Faith in Christ comes first*, not a faith in the Christian's *confession of faith*, but a faith in the object of their faith which is *Christ*.

*Second, a true faith* should be followed by good works, which God hath ordained. So then, faith is proved when it is followed by good works. This is a lifetime of being conformed to Jesus's likeness of love, called *godliness*, putting others first and self, last. Catholic Apologists are calling this process, of daily growing in love and godliness, a daily occurrence of conversion to bolster their doctrine and teaching that we are still "being saved."

The cleansing of our sin by Jesus's blood, the salvation of our soul through faith in the sinless Christ's offering and God's placing of our sin behind his back, is finished.

All, and that is a very big *all*, that is left is for God to fulfill his promise to conform us to the image of his Son, something that he only does for his children. Jesus knows his sheep, and God knows his children; there are none who will be lost, left behind, or deceived/plucked out of God's hand by Satan.

### **Thigpen**

"Many of them also believe that this act of faith now guarantees them a place in heaven, no matter what they may do for the rest of their lives. They will never have to face the punishment of hell for their sins."

As we saw earlier, this is a mistaken idea. Only false Christians would believe this, especially if Thigpen is intimating that these people are willfully sinning to satisfy their lust. However, God is surely plenteous in mercy for his saved children who struggle with sin and continue to seek forgiveness, as Jesus explained to Peter forgiveness has no limit.

Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until *seventy times seven*. (Matt. 18:21–22)

### **Thigpen**

“The teaching of the Catholic Church helps us understand that this is actually—a mistaken notion of salvation ... Salvation in the fullest sense is an ongoing process that won’t be complete until after we die. And in the meantime, it’s still possible to turn away again from God ... ‘saved,’ (?) ... Well, I’m doing what the Apostle Paul tells us to do in the Bible: I’m ‘working out’ my salvation day by day (see Phil. 2:12).”

Well, let us take Thigpen’s advice, and put Philippians 2:12 in its proper context.

*Being confident of this very thing, that he (God the Father) which hath begun a good work in you (a saved, forgiven, Holy Spirit baptized, and sealed saint) will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ ... And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment; That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ; Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God ... And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more, bold to speak the word without fear ... stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the \*gospel; And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you, salvation, and that of God. For unto you it is given on the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake ... Let nothing be done through*

strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on things of others. Let this mind be in you, which was also in *Christ Jesus*: Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But *made himself of no reputation*, and took upon him the form of *a servant*, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, *he humbled himself, and became obedient unto \*death, even the \*death of the cross*. Wherefore, God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That *at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the Glory of God the Father*.

(12.) Wherefore, my beloved (saints and brethren in Christ), as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, *‘work out’ your own salvation with fear and trembling*. (13.) *For it is God which worketh in you to will and to do of his good pleasure*. (Phil. 1:6, 9–11, 14, 27–29; 2:3–13)

So, we see that we already have our salvation, but we should work it out in fear and trembling because God is the one who is working in us.

As his children, he uses us for his “good pleasure,” the goal being, to fulfill his purpose of saving as many as will believe. And how is this salvation brought about? Through the preaching of the Gospel, his Word. And how is it carried out or proved? By the “conversation” of our lives. As Paul says, he was not sent to perform water baptisms.

*Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the \*gospel*: not with wisdom of words, lest *the cross of Christ* should be made of none, effect. For *the preaching of the cross* is to them that perish foolishness; but *unto us which are saved it is the power of God*. (1 Cor. 1:17–18)

*God has given all his children the same Holy Spirit* as the apostles; therefore, we too should live as his children to bring him glory. We should not worry about doing enough good works to get to heaven, but we should work together to plant and water the seeds



of God’s Word so that God may bring in the increase, resulting in the opportunity for all the souls who believe to have the joy of bowing to him in this life and the next.

### **Thigpen**

“Salvation in its fullness is God’s new creation. *To save us, He remakes us in His likeness—A lifelong process requiring our cooperation ... [with] its completion only in Heaven ... those who are joined there with God ... will achieve their greatest destiny ... They will become what they were made to be.*” (*emphasis added*)

Remember that *Apostle Paul, an original, biblical Christian apologist*, who wrote the scriptures under the Holy Spirit’s guidance, penned to the Ephesians concerning good works.

For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. (Eph. 2:10)

*First comes a saving faith in Christ. Second comes the good works*, which God hath ordained that we should walk in, for his glory. They are not a requirement on the path to salvation; they are the visible evidence and proof of a believer’s salvation.

### **Thigpen**

“We’re like the survivors of a shipwreck in a storm out in mid-ocean. We’ve been rescued from drowning and welcomed onboard *The Ship we call The Church*. *That ship* is now taking us to a safe harbor—our home in heaven with God. But we’re not home yet.” (*emphasis added*)

Noah’s Ark is pictured as a refuge that protected Noah and his family from God’s wrath, the same protection Jesus provides the believer when they are said to be seated in Christ through faith.

“Opening the Word: The true presence in the Eucharist is the foundation for the clergy.”<sup>15</sup>

“Keep the ship on the same course because, we’ll be there no matter what happens. The feast of Corpus Christi is a reminder that many of us have been there all along and will continue to stay, even when the clergy are corrupt. We don’t show up to church for excellent preaching. We don’t show up for clerical virtue. We show up because only in this place can we receive the gift beyond all gifts and love beyond all loves: the very sacrifice of Christ that renews the cosmos ... The corruption of the Church is not novel. A volume of ecclesial history could be written describing the corruption that has dwelt in the Church in each era ... I show up to Mass ... even,



in the, midst of scandal, because I come to meet the *risen Lord* made available in the *Eucharist.*” (emphasis added) —Timothy O’Malley, *Our Sunday Visitor*

Like other quoted Catholic apologists, Thigpen speaks the language of the scripture, but eventually it all comes back to an allegiance to the *Church* and *faith plus good works*. Everyone must do their part in *achieving their salvation* and that salvation will not be fully achieved until you reach heaven.

**Thigpen**

“You could say, then, that we’ve been ‘saved’ in the sense of being rescued and taken aboard a safe vessel. But we can’t really speak of being ‘saved’ in the full sense until we reach our destination. We must humbly admit that we haven’t yet arrived at final perfection.”

This is an area where Catholics do not understand that *biblical Christians do not claim to be perfect* in our own actions. We are fully saved because of Jesus who perfectly saved us and washed away our sins with his perfect sinless shed blood, given on the *cross*. This perfect salvation is then gifted through faith in Jesus Christ based on the perfect promise of his word. We are still God’s “workmanship” as he conforms us to the perfect image of his Son. This journey/work will not be perfectly *complete* until we see him face-to-face in heaven.

Jesus never described himself as a ship, but he did describe himself as a *door*; Jesus is the *door* to heaven. In Christ, the sinner who deserved eternal death is born again spiritually, eagerly welcomed, clothed with Jesus righteousness, and safe from the wrath of God.

*While here on earth, we are complete in our ownership of the gift of salvation, simply and completely through faith in Jesus.* Apostle Paul reveals the fact of the saint's assurance, joy, and salvation.

*Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ ... God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them. (2 Cor. 5:17–19)*

*Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us ... redemption. (1 Cor. 1:30)*

*For I am not ashamed of the \*gospel of Christ: For it is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believeth ... For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: As it is written, the just shall live by faith ... even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe ... Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: That he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus. (Rom. 1:16–17; 22:25–26)*

*For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God. For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness ... David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works. (Rom. 4:2–6)*

God justifies the ungodly by faith apart from good works.

For if by *one* man’s offence death reigned by *one*; much more they which receive abundance of, grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by *one*, Jesus Christ.) Therefore, as by the offence of *one* judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of *one* the Free-Gift came upon all men unto justification of life. (Rom. 5:17–18)

**Thigpen**

“Meanwhile, we also must recognize the sobering possibility that—God forbid—we could choose someday to jump overboard again.”

Paul teaches about this possibility in the book of Hebrews.

Therefore, leaving the principals of the *doctrine of Christ*, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of *repentance from dead works*, and of *faith toward God*, of the *doctrine of baptisms*, and of *laying on of hands*, and of *resurrection of the dead*, and of *eternal judgment*. And this will we do if *God* permit. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the *Holy Ghost*, and have tasted the good *word of God*, and the powers of the world to come. (Heb. 6:1–5)

Continuing in Hebrews 6, verses 6–19, Paul is making some serious points.

*If they fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh and put him to an open shame.* For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned. *But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.*

*For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister. And we desire that every one of you do shew the same*

*diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end: That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises. For when God made promise to Abraham, because, he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself, saying, surely, blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee. And so, after he (Abraham) had patiently endured, he obtained the promise. For men verily swear by the greater: and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.*

Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an *oath*:

That by *two immutable things*, in which *it was impossible for God to lie*, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the *hope* set before us: Which *hope* we have as an *anchor* of the soul, both *sure and stedfast*. (Heb. 6:6–19)

### **Thigpen**

“Salvation isn’t guaranteed just because of something we’ve done in the past. We continue to have freewill ... so we still have-the-ability-to turn away from God again. It’s a chilling possibility ... If we’re tempted to forsake Him, He’ll grant us power to resist that temptation. Even so, the choice is still ours. In fact, we make choices every day that draw us closer to God or lead us farther away from Him. That’s why *simply believing in Jesus isn’t enough.*” (*emphasis added*)

*The Catholic Church wants to put just enough fear* in you so that you will put your faith and hope in something that you can do and see. They want to keep you in line with their salvation agenda: the sacraments of their Church. If simply believing in Jesus was *enough*, then the Catholic Church, the Mass, the Sacraments, and so forth, would *not be necessary*.

*Paul Thigpen and Catholic Apologist* use phrases, like “jump overboard again” and “salvation isn’t guaranteed” and “the choice is still ours” and “simply believing in Jesus

isn't enough." Because they refer to jumping from the *Church*; salvation is through the *Church*; you may decide to sin by leaving the *Church*. Simply believing isn't enough because then you wouldn't need the *Church*.

God justifies sinners through faith in Jesus's atoning blood sacrifice accomplished upon the Cross.

But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the *blood* of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from *all* sin. (1 John 1:7)

And the *blood* shall be to you for a token upon the houses where ye are: and when I see the *blood*, I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you to destroy *you*, when I smite the land of Egypt. (Exod. 12:13)

How much more shall the *blood* of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? (Heb. 9:14; see also Col. 1:14; Rom. 4:4)

The debt sinners owe God for their sins can only be paid for with *blood*, the sinner's, or Jesus's. We can never pay our sin debt with good works because we could never do enough and because, no *blood* was shed, and no death occurred.

The result, of Jesus's sinless life and his shed *blood*, was that payment was made and accepted for our sin debt. Through faith in Christ Jesus, Jesus's payment is credited to the *hell-bound sinner's* account, checked off as *debt paid in full!*

### **Thigpen**

"Faith is useless, then, without good works. God must have our active cooperation, because both our mind and our will—the full likeness of God—must be renewed if we're to *be saved in the end.*" (*emphasis added*)

Jesus's comment in Matthew 7:17 *clearly* caps off the biblical view that salvation is given as a gift immediately upon a hell-bound sinner's repentance, admittance of guilt, and faith in Jesus's death, burial, and resurrection. As a result, the newly sealed saint

should be doing good works, such as spreading the Gospel and loving and serving their neighbors, family, friends, and yes, enemies.

Even so every *good tree* bringeth forth *good fruit*; but a *corrupt tree* bringeth forth *evil fruit*. Not everyone that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter-into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? And in thy name have cast out devils? And in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, *I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.* (Matt. 7:17, 21–23)

Jesus did not say, “*I knew you for a while, and then you decided to leave.*” He said, “*I never knew you.*”

*By faith in Christ*, which others cannot see, we are justified with God. *By good works, done “in Christ,”* which can be seen, we are justified with men. Our neighbors can say, “These Christians are truly born again; we have seen their good works, and we can testify that they love and obey their God.”

*If you believe you are justified before God* through faith and good works, you are not connected to the vine. Jesus describes himself as the vine; he does not describe the *Church* as the vine.

Apostle Paul wants his hearers to remember what he and the other apostles preached according to the scriptures. Paul clearly and specifically lays out what the Gospel is according to the scriptures.

I declare unto you the *\*gospel ... which ... ye have received ... wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you ... For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ \*died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was \*buried, and that he \*rose again the third day according to the scriptures: And that he was seen of Cephias (Peter), then the twelve ... above five hundred brethren at once ... James; then all the apostles. And last ... me ... Therefore, whether it, were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.* (1 Cor. 15:1–8, 11)

**Number Two, About Catholics Team—“Catholic Assurance of Salvation”** <sup>16</sup>

**ABOUT CATHOLICS TEAM**

“Have you been saved? Do you *know* if you are going to heaven? The answer any Catholic should be able to say without fear is *Yes. (emphasis added)*

“There is nothing wrong with your church not guaranteeing your salvation instantaneously—there is something seriously wrong if you are told you are going to heaven for sure after saying a little prayer.”

I would agree with the comment about “a little prayer.” I assume they are referring to the Protestant “sinner’s prayer” that some use ad nauseam. There is too much emphasis on it, and sometimes it’s a, “Let’s hurry up and get as many people to say it as possible and then tell them that it only works if you are really serious” kind of prayer. Oddly enough, it is the same thing Catholics say about their prayers, like the rosary, novenas, or the wearing of the scapulars.

I am so grateful that I was saved at age seven through my faith in what Jesus had done for me. He died on the Cross for my sins to save me from the eternal punishment of hell. I will never forget that day, the *joy* that followed and what led up to it; And it happened without saying a sinner’s prayer! My salvation was instantaneous with my *faith—in Jesus*. Being raised Catholic, I did not even know or had even heard of a sinner’s prayer. My desire for forgiveness, salvation, and eternal life was expressed in my heartfelt faith.

Jesus taught his disciples not to use repetitious prayers.

But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. (Matt. 6:7)

I do understand that for some, the sinner’s prayer guides them in expressing what is in their hearts. It is not the words themselves that saves them but the expression of the faith that is behind the words. I do not know why some pastors follow up by saying it does not matter how you feel afterward. If a person is serious about their repentance, faith, and surrender to serve Jesus, I believe the joy of the Lord would be their strength.

The Holy Spirit tells me I am forgiven and saved through his joy and God’s word. Maybe it is the fact that those who do not have the joy have not spent enough time



searching and reading the scriptures to come to the true realization that they deserve to spend an eternity in hell! If the Holy Spirit has brought you to that truth and then you are blessed through scripture with the knowledge that Jesus died to save you and you believe, that faith brings the truest joy you will ever experience—forgiveness and the freedom from the debt and guilt of sin.

“Our love for God and our appreciation of His love and forgiveness will be in proportion to the recognition of our sin and unworthiness.”<sup>17</sup>

—**Dave Hunt**

A Testimony of a Baptist Church Believer/Saint

“Prayed the Sinner’s Prayer”<sup>18</sup>

*“I was raised in the Church ... prayed the sinner’s prayer.*

“I knew the stories: Noah’s ark, Moses, Joseph’s coat of many colors ... I don’t remember the date ... oh ... do I remember the invitation! ... I was going to *Hell* ... My heart was pounding.

“I got out of that place under heavy conviction. I knew I had to do something. I thought, ‘I can fix all this. I know what to do. I was raised in church.’ ... I need to go to church, get baptized and get married; then everything would be alright. So that’s what I did.

“I was clean, and I wasn’t going to sin anymore. I will go to church every week and take communion ... I was trying to do everything to save myself. I even put the rock’n roll down and listened to Christian radio.

“Man, I didn’t fix anything. I was getting pounded all day with ‘Love Worth Finding.’ *I needed Jesus*, not baptism; *I needed Jesus’s perfect life*, not my pathetic attempt at perfection. (*emphasis added*)

“I quit trying to live the Christian life and started trusting in the Savior’s life. It’s a substitution salvation. He died instead of me. It was a-free-gift.

His righteousness was counted unto me ... I started to study the Bible ... it was God’s Word.

“All the Bible stories changed. It wasn’t Noah’s ark anymore, the ark was Jesus saving me from God’s wrath, Moses was Jesus delivering me from bondage, and Joseph accepting his brothers was Jesus accepting me.

“His death on the cross was my sin debt paid in full.

“It was hard to understand the free, gift. I always felt like I had to earn it. I must have prayed the sinner’s prayer a *hundred times*, sometimes twice in the same message! I surrendered to Jesus; I gave all I knew of me to all I knew of Him.” (*emphasis added*)

**A CATHOLIC NOVENA PRAYER—THE FOURTEEN HOLY HELPERS**

The Fourteen Holy Helpers are saints of the Catholic Church who were prayed to during the Black Death plague which blanketed Europe from 1346 to 1349. Today in 2020 you are encouraged to pray this novena to help stop the coronavirus as well as other pandemics.

“Fourteen Holy Helpers Novena” —Pray each day for nine days <sup>19</sup>

“O, *Fourteen Holy Helpers*, select friends of God, I honor thee as mighty intercessors, and come with filial confidence to thee in my needs, for the relief of which I have undertaken to make in this novena. (*emphasis added*)

“Help me by thy intercession to placate God’s divine and just wrath, which I have provoked by my many sins, and aid me in amending my life and doing penance.

“Because you persevered till death, you gained the crown of eternal life.

“Remember the dangers that surround us in this vale of tears and intercede for us in all our needs and adversities.

*(Mention your intention here)*

“Great princes of heaven, *Holy Helpers*, who sacrificed to God all your possessions, wealth, preferment, and even life, and now are crowned in heaven in the secure enjoyment of eternal bliss and glory, have compassion on me, a poor sinner in this vale of tears, and obtain for me from God, for Whom you gave up all things and Who loves you as His servants, the strength to bear patiently all the trials of this life, to overcome all temptations, and to persevere in God’s service to the end, that one day I too may be received into your company, to praise and glorify Him, the supreme Lord, Whose beatific vision you enjoy, and Whom you praise and glorify forever. Amen.” *(emphasis added)*

“Pray the novena easily via your smart phone with daily reminders so you never forget to pray using the Pray Catholic Novena app!” —*Devin Rose, Pray Catholic Novenas*

Devin Rose also mentions his new book *Lionheart Catholic* in which he reveals *19 additional* practices “that every Catholic should be following in order to become a saint.”

## **MY RENDITION OF AN-ALTERNATE-CHOICE TO THE “FOURTEEN HOLY HELPERS”**

### **My God**

My Savior Jesus, my friend, the Son of God.

I honor thee my mighty King, my High Priest, the mediator I cannot see.  
I bow my knees before thee, in thanksgiving I sing, for the sin burden you

paid, setting me free. Help me glorify thy name, for taking your Father’s wrath, for my sin debt and shame.

You were victorious over sin and death, defeating Satan with your final breath. Through faith your resurrection provided, eternal life for those who have decided, that denying their life to serve the Christ will be their glorious delight.

Jesus now seated at the right hand of God, gave up all he possessed, his life and righteousness. Now in heaven until he returns, giving rest to others, relieving their religious concerns.

With his gift of heaven instore, he comes with arms open wide knocking on the door. Jesus awaits your hearts reply, what will you decide? Will you choose to be in Christ, while he sits at his Father’s side. Amen. Come Lord Jesus.

Rosary promise #5

“The soul which recommends itself to me by the recitation of the Rosary, shall not perish.” —

**Blessed Virgin Mary**

Here is the consecration promise from Our Lady of Fatima—“To everyone ... who *sincerely* tries to live it:”  
(*emphasis added*)

“I will never leave you; my Immaculate Heart will be your refuge, and the way that will lead you to God.” —**Our Lady of Fatima**



“Scripture and Tradition with Priest Mitch Pacwa—2019-01-15”<sup>20</sup>

Sharing in his “Scripture and Tradition” program, while teaching from his book *Saved*, when asked about praying to saints, Pacwa quoted the books

of Hebrews and Revelation, to prove that praying to saints was biblical. He also commented on the importance of praying to the saints.

“To not pray to saints, is a sin.” —**Priest Mitch Pacwa**

Pacwa mentioned Hebrews 12:22, but let us look at it in context.

In verses 17–21, Paul is talking about the mount from which God spoke to the Israelites, and then Paul shares about the mount which believers come to.

But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. (Heb. 12:22–24)

It mentions the church but does not say anything about praying to the saints for guidance or help. The same holds true for the passage in Revelation.

And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four *and* twenty elders fell-down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers *of* saints. (Rev. 5:8)

The prayers were *of* the saints, not *to* the saints.

And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer: and there was given him much incense, that he should offer *it* with the prayers *of* all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. And the smoke of the incense, *which came* with the prayers *of* the saints, ascended-up before God out of the angel’s hand. (Rev. 8:3–4)

Here again, the prayers are from the saints, not to the saints.

The Psalmist always and only encourages looking to the true God of heaven.

Truly God is good to Israel, even to such as are of a clean heart ... So foolish *was* I, and ignorant: I was as a beast before thee. Nevertheless, I am continually with thee: Thou hast holden me by my right hand, thou, shalt guide me with thy counsel, and afterward receive me to glory. *Whom have I in heaven but thee?* And there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee. My flesh and my heart faileth: but God, is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever. For, lo, they that are far from thee shall perish: Thou hast destroyed all them that go a whoring from thee. But it is good for me to draw near to God: I have put my trust in the Lord God, that I may declare all thy works. (Ps. 73:1, 22–28)

O LORD God of my salvation, I have cried day and night *before thee*: Let my prayer come *before thee*: incline *thine ear* unto my cry; For my soul is full of troubles: and my life draweth nigh unto the grave. (Ps. 88:1–3)

Come and hear, all ye that fear God, and I will declare what *he hath done* for my soul. I cried *unto him* with my mouth, and *he was extolled* with my tongue. If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear *me*: *But* verily God hath heard me; he hath attended to the voice of my prayer. *Blessed be God*, which hath not turned away my prayer, nor his mercy from me. (Ps. 66:16–20)

This poor man cried, and *the Lord heard him, and saved him* out of all his troubles. (Ps. 34:6)

Because *he hath* inclined his ear unto me, therefore will *I call upon him* as, long as I live. (Ps. 116:2)

The true God of heaven hears the prayers of all those who humble themselves before him, even Cornelius, a seeking unbeliever who had not yet heard the gospel.

*I prayed* in my house, and, behold, a man (an angel messenger) stood before me in bright clothing, and said, Cornelius, *thy prayer is heard*, and thine alms are had in remembrance *in the sight of God*. (Acts 10:30–31)

In the Scriptures, we receive instructions in praying to God the Father, in God the Son's Name (Jesus), and our prayers go through and are helped by God the Holy Spirit. We cannot and do not pray to the saints; as stated in scripture they are our fellow citizens.

*For through him (Jesus) we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.*  
Now therefore, ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God. (Eph. 2:18–19)

Jesus instructs believers to direct our prayers to God our heavenly Father, in Jesus's name.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven,  
Hallowed be thy name. (Matt. 6:9)

And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. (John 14:13–14)

That whatsoever, ye shall ask of the Father in my name, He may give it you. (John 15:16)

And in that day *ye shall ask me nothing*. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever, ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you ... ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. (John 16:23–24)

Jesus has given believers the Holy Spirit adopting us into God's family. The Holy Spirit gives us assurance and helps us by praying for our requests.

For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God. . . . Likewise, the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. (Rom. 8:15, 26)

In late March of 2020, I received in a mail solicitation of what appeared to be a copy of a front page, article of The National Catholic Register, Volume 93, No. 22. The article was a story about “How to Pray Mother Teresa’s Famous ‘Flying Novena’ to Our Lady” under this title is the encouragement that “Mother Teresa found this a never-fail quick novena to turn to our Blessed Mother for speedy assistance.”

The said, centuries-old, Novena boldly proclaims Mary’s Motherly love for the world.

**The Flying Novena—Pray for nine days**

“Remember, O most gracious Virgin Mary, that never was it known that anyone who fled to your protection, implored your help, or sought your intercession was left unaided. Inspired with this confidence, I fly unto you, O Virgin of virgins, my Mother. To you I come, before you I stand, sinful and sorrowful. O Mother of the Word incarnate, despise not my petition, but in your clemency hear and answer me. Amen.”

My following rendition gives glory to the heavenly Father.

**Truly God—Whom have I in heaven but thee—Psalm 73:1, 25**

Remember O merciful all knowing, heavenly Father, your gracious forgiveness for the humble, repentant, sinner who believes and follows. You promised to feed and clothe us, even the sparrow escapes not your notice. Our dear God and Father, in heaven we pray, thank you for your crucified Son who died undeservedly when we were yet going astray. Your love removes our sin as far as east is from west, and casts them all into the sea depths. No more remembered, the cleansing blood shed upon a tree, white as snow I now shall be. God’s obedient Son satisfied our need, our salvation purchased clear and free. Let us vow now to return the same, faithfully obedient believing in his name. Now we are God’s possession held carefully in his hand, our hope not yet seen, but-yet we stand. The Spirit and Word gives the joy we need, while we await our coming King. Amen.

Thank you, Heavenly Father, my Savior Jesus and always a thank you for our Helper, the Holy Spirit.



Salvation is something we must ask for, which we cannot see, but we must patiently wait in hope, as Paul writes to the saints in Rome.

For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet, hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it. (Rom. 8:24–25)

A Catholic Response, Inc.—“Salvation: Assurance or Hope? Are you saved?”<sup>21</sup>

“Through Christ’s Church—the Catholic Church, we can come to a knowledge of the truth (1 Tim. 3:15; Matt. 16:18).”

Catholics teach and claim that it is through the Sacraments that the free, gift of God’s saving grace is received. Two Sacraments are mentioned: Baptism and Confession. It is clearly stated that, “As Sinners we are *not* assured of our salvation.” (*emphasis added*)

But do not give up hope because “Christians, who faithfully use the Sacraments—Channels of God’s saving grace—without giving up, can certainly hope for salvation.” —*Catholic News Agency, Printed with permission from A Catholic Response, Inc.*

**About Catholics Team**— “Catholic Assurance of Salvation”<sup>22</sup>

How can we actually-know that we are going to heaven?

“Well, in a sense, the Bible does guarantee salvation to those who want it badly enough, but on certain conditions. It is *not as simple as* (*emphasis added*) only believing in and proclaiming Jesus as the Savior.”

What does Jesus say?

*Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only the one who does the will of my Father in heaven.*  
(Matt. 7:21)

Is salvation as simple as receiving the Eucharist? The following quote is from a children's book.

*Stories of the Blessed Sacrament*—"Help children get to know Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament and encourage them to remain close to him in the Eucharist all their lives."<sup>23</sup>

"When we go to Communion, like the Apostles on the night of the Last Supper, we receive the Body and Blood of Jesus. The consecrated host is Jesus himself, *who comes to dwell in our hearts!*" (*emphasis added*)  
—*Francine Bay-Heniing Zang, Ignatius Press*

Salvation is, just as simple as *believing in and proclaiming* Jesus as "your" Savior. Catholics and other unbelievers just do not understand that believing in Jesus means that you have acknowledged before God, that your righteousness is as a "filthy rag," that you have recognized that you deserve to go to hell for your sin, and that you have come to believe that Jesus's payment for sin and his victory over sin is the only correct choice. Jesus is the narrow way to everlasting life. Remember what Jesus teaches about bringing forth fruit.

A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire. Wherefore, *by their fruits ye shall know them* ... Many will say to me in that day, Lord, lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? And in thy name done many wonderful works? (Matt. 7:18–20, 22)

Men will see our fruit. God will see our faith.

**About Catholics Team**— "Catholic Assurance of Salvation"<sup>24</sup>

Mentions a cross reference of Matthew 5:44–48, without quoting the passage, here is the King James Version.

But I say unto you, *Love* your enemies, *bless* them that curse you, *do good* to them that hate you, and *pray* for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that ye may be *the children* of your Father which is in heaven: for he, maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? Do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? Do not even the publicans so? *Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.* (Matt. 5:44–48)

**About Catholics Team** — “Catholic Assurance of Salvation”<sup>25</sup>

“We are given a commission to be perfect as God is perfect meaning, we are to love all. *We are to help others gain access to God, through his Son, Jesus . . . Simply* attempting to have a right relationship with God and neglecting our duty to the poor, sick and other people that need help is essentially a sin. It is the sin of formalism—*A simple act* of accepting Jesus as Lord and Savior is not enough to assure anyone of going to heaven. There is *much more* to it, and that is by doing the will of God.” (*emphasis added*).

The following Pontiff seems to agree with the simplicity and assurance of salvation through a simple act of accepting Jesus as Lord and Eucharist!

“The surest, easiest, shortest way is the Eucharist.” —**Pontiff St. Pius X**

*Catholics seem to be unable* to comprehend the idea that only children of God can live like children of God. The “*much more*,” which needs to be done, comes after salvation is received. It is what is lived out as the child of God walks the talk, while becoming more like Christ.

*The Great Catholic attack*, is against the idea that you can be forgiven and receive God's gift of everlasting life simply by accepting/trusting Jesus as Lord and Savior. Why is this wrong? Because Catholic Apologist must shore up the importance of the Sacraments and the Catholic Priesthood, etc. to keep Catholic followers in the Church. However, it appears that Jesus and the apostle John, think otherwise.

Jesus answered ... This is *the work of God, that ye believe on him whom, he hath sent.* (John 6:29)

*Whosoever, believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God ... By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep His commandments ... For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.* (1 John 5:1–2, 4)

We overcome by faith, in Christ, not by Sacraments and Church attendance.

Concerning salvation, I know that my salvation happened in an instant, the instant I realized I could be forgiven through believing in Jesus as shared in John 3:16. When you realize that hell is staring you in the face and you're not sure where you are headed and God sees you're concerned and seeking, your hope for a way out through God's grace is really awesome and faith in Jesus opens the faucet! If you think that sounds simple, listen to the following two Catholic versions.

### **First Version**

"Becoming a Good Catholic?"<sup>26</sup>

Susan has an exceptionally long question in which she shares various concerns involving her spiritual walk, but here is her bottom line.

Q. *"My question is: If I probably won't be a GOOD Catholic—that is, any better Catholic than I've been a Protestant, mainly not being a faithful churchgoer and worker—is there any point in becoming one? ... Susan H., via e-mail*

A. “You should consider this: With God’s grace, everything can change in an instant! ... you CAN change for the better! Once you become Catholic, you will have unlimited sanctifying grace available to you through the sacraments, especially frequent reception of the holy Eucharist. And that grace—If you receive it with a humble and open heart—can completely change you ... *You could become a saint.*” (emphasis added) —Priest Francis Hoffman, J.C.D.

This is kind of unique for a Catholic Priest, to say or write because when a sinner simply puts their faith in Jesus, God’s grace completely changes them, and *you do become a saint!* This is a clear parallel between the opposing focuses of the Catholic and biblical Christian faith.

The following pamphlet is “Not copyrighted. Reproduction encouraged.” They are distributed free by Richard Bernardi. Send a stamped, self-addressed envelope to: My Ticket to Heaven, P.O. Box 5, Dept. B, Fisherville, KY 40023–0005. Donations are welcomed. The copy I have says it was the twenty-seventh printing in September 1989.

Priest “John A. Hardon, S.J., World renowned Catholic theologian, professor, lecturer, and author of 20 books, among them, “The Modern Catholic Dictionary,” “The Catholic Catechism,” “The Question and Answer Catholic Catechism” gives the pamphlet a big thumbs up!

“MY TICKET TO HEAVEN is excellent! It is a straight-forward presentation of the cardinal mysteries of the Christian Faith ... I sincerely hope that this booklet will receive the wide circulation it deserves.”

Sister M. Angelica, S.C., “There has been nothing like it ever before.”

## Second Version

“MY TICKET TO HEAVEN”<sup>27</sup>

The great majority of the ellipses are a part of the original text.

“**KEEP MY FACE TURNED TOWARD GOD** ... for turning around and going in the opposite direction; we call it: DEADLY or MORTAL SIN

so to commit a mortal sin is the most **stupid** thing I can do ... absolutely **nothing more stupid** ... nonsensical ... than ... to turn ... from ... those gates of heaven and start going toward the gates of hell ... nothing more **disastrous ... catastrophic ... so** disastrous ... **so** catastrophic ... it would be better if I would cease to exist, than to turn away from God ... **‘Me** commit sin? Never ... never.’ But me remain faithful to God? Ever ... ever.’ And if I maintain ... this determination ... this disposition of mind and soul ... I can be sure of never committing sin. **And I can be sure, thereby of going to heaven!**

“If I make this my policy throughout my life, to anyone asking me if I am going to heaven when I die, I can say: ‘Well, if I don’t make it, it won’t be **my** fault: **that** I guarantee you.’

“And right there **is** the guarantee that I will make it.

“To look at this from **another** angle, it would be a **sin** for me to go to hell. Because it is against God’s will for me to go to hell. And anything that is against God’s will is a sin. But I refuse to do anything that is against God’s will. With God as my helper I absolutely refuse to commit sin. Therefore, I refuse to go to hell. It’s as *simple* as that.” —*Priest Paul Thomas, Altoona-Johnston (PA) diocese*

Let us look at the Catholicism for “dummies” Cheat Sheet to define mortal sin.

“Mortal and Venial Sins in the Catholic Church” <sup>28</sup>

“The Church believes that if you commit a mortal sin, you forfeit heaven and opt for hell by your own free will and actions.”

There are three conditions that must be met in-order-for a mortal sin to be committed:

It must be a “grave matter” which, if carried out would be “intrinsically evil and immoral;” it must be carried out with the “full knowledge” that what is going to be done is a grave matter; and it must be done freely with “deliberate consent.” —*dummies, A Wiley Brand*

Many Catholics are not informed of the above conditions or of the following list of mortal sins.

“15 Mortal Sins Catholics are Missing in their Confessions” —Pilgrim Priest, Theology article of August 3, 2019

“Part I: Why Do We Need Confession and What Is Mortal Sin?

“Without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins.’—Heb. 9:22. Thus, the only thing that can reconcile us sinners to God is a God-man Jesus Christ on His cross. [At this point we see the biblical truth of Jesus’s payment being credited to a sinner’s account by faith, however, the Catholic truth comes in with the sacraments] The merits of His Passion, Death and Resurrection *are communicated first by baptism* (1 Pet. 3:21) *and later confession of actual sins to a priest* (John 20:22–23.)” (*emphasis added*)

For Catholics sanctifying grace is first gained by the sacrament of water baptism and the only way it can be lost is through mortal sin. “There is no grey area in this matter—*every baptized Catholic on the planet is either in sanctifying grace or mortal sin*. Those who die in sanctifying grace go to heaven, or heaven via Purgatory. Those who die in mortal sin go to hell.”

“Part II: 15 Mortal Sins Catholics Are Frequently Missing in Their Confessions

Numbers 1–2, 4–6 fall within a category which involves:

Any sexual gratification wherein sperm and egg are prevented/or have no chance of forming human life.

“3. Immodesty, Including Wearing Leggings and Short Shorts.

“7. Chronic failure to catechize your kids.

- “8. Greatly harming someone’s reputation [Gossip].
- “9. Missing Sunday Mass without good reason and /or unnecessary work on Sunday.
- “10. Denying your workers, a fair wage.
- “11. Getting Drunk or High.
- “12. Saying the Name of Jesus in Vain.
- “13. Denying the Catholic faith, including any involvement in the occult even tarot cards or Ouija boards.
- “14. Skipping Friday Penance. [Which used to be eating no meat.] The new Code of Canon Law released under Pope John Paul II has only changed the *type* of penance, not the requirement for a Friday penance. Now, the suggestion is still to stay meatless, but a substitutionary penance is permitted in the new 1983 code.
- “15. Receiving Holy Communion with any of the above sins on your heart.

The author ends by giving assurance to his readers that the above listed sins are all mortal sins and if your “parish priest or confessor” doesn’t agree, “please tell him I will debate him publicly on the Magisterium in any place, in any forum (his parish, street corner, or on YouTube) at any time he wants.” —*Priest David Nix*,

However, in all honesty, all sin keeps us out of heaven, and there is no Purgatory. Even though the Catholic Church teaches otherwise, God does not, but God is plenteous in mercy and the same blood of Jesus that was shed to wash away our so-called venial sins also washes away our so-called mortal sins. You must decide of your own free will if you want to turn from your sin—worldly sinful enjoyments or addictions—to serve God and become more like Christ. It should be a no-brainer if you want to go to heaven!

And in all honesty, aside from all the sins mentioned in the Scriptures, it is a mortal sin to not obey all that the Catholic Church teaches as necessary to be a Catholic in matters of practice and belief. This would include not attending all required Masses, not receiving the Sacrament of Penance and the Eucharist at least once a year, and, though there may be more, not having devotions to Mary.

On January 1, 2020, Pontiff Francis commented on devotions to Mary.



“Devotion to Mary is a must”<sup>29</sup>

“*Devotion to Mary is not spiritual etiquette; it is a requirement of the Christian life (emphasis added)*—If our faith is not to be reduced merely to an idea or a doctrine, all of us need a mother’s heart.” —**Pontiff Francis**

“Devotion to Mary, Model of Femininity”<sup>30</sup>

“Yesterday was a celebration of Corpus Christi—Feast of the Body and Blood of Jesus. Mary, who was His first Tabernacle, is our ultimate icon and guide to, perfect, traditional catholic femininity.

“Through Mary, we get access to the fullness of Christ ... through her, Man becomes godly.

“The Three Hail Marys Devotion”

“Three Hail Marys to be said when waking up and when going to bed.” —  
*Traditional Catholic Femininity*

Biblically, Jesus is simpler and a 100 percent surety!

Hereby *know we* that we dwell in him, and he in us, *because he hath given us of his Spirit.* (1 John 4:13)

*We know* that we have passed from death unto life, *because, we love the brethren.* He that loveth not *his* brother abideth in death. (1 John 3:14)

And this is *his commandment*, That, we should *believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another*, as he gave us commandment. (1 John 3:23)

Clearly these passages say that we are saved *by faith*, and to validate or prove this faith, it should be followed up with *love* for our brethren and neighbors.

**About Catholics Team— “Catholic Assurance of Salvation”**

“It is not enough to ‘win souls’ or prophesy or send Bibles to China.”

The Berean Call/The Christian Post <sup>31</sup>

“China hearing gospel via Africa; church growing amid brutal persecution”<sup>32</sup>

As a result of the influx of Chinese resources and approximately 10,000 Chinese-owned companies, the estimated 227,000 to 1 million Chinese working on the continent are hearing the message of the Gospel from African evangelical Christians.

“Many local African churches have reached out to Chinese workers ... And a small but growing number of ethnically Chinese missionaries from Taiwan and other countries are specifically targeting Chinese nationals in Africa.” —*Brandon Showalter, The Christian Post*

Read also “How Africa is converting China,” *UnHerd*, February 13, 2019.

Praise God!

A Bible-believing Christian *would not* attest to the idea that it is necessary to win souls or prophesy or send Bibles to China to be saved. We are saved by God’s undeserved grace through a free-will act of faith in Jesus. A changed life of love and good works should follow. If not, that person was not saved because a good tree or branch bears good fruit.

Here are a couple of verses for Catholics to consider.

But without *faith it is* impossible to please *him*: for he, that cometh to God must *believe* that he is, and *that* he is a rewarder of them that *diligently seek him*. (Heb. 11:6)

For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all. (James 2:10)

If a person commits one sin, they are just as guilty before God as if they had committed every sin.

**Number Three**, Douglas Beaumont—“Can We Know That We Have Eternal Life”<sup>33</sup>

### **Beaumont**

“Many Christians point to 1 John 5:13 as proof that the apostle wrote his epistle *to assure believers of their final salvation* based on their present belief. The verse reads: ‘I write this to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life’ (RSV). It looks like an open-and-shut case, right? Maybe not.” (*emphasis added*)

This quote from 1 John 5:13 (RSV) has intentionally left out half of the verse, being guilty of removing words of God inspired by the Holy Spirit from the scriptures. The King James Version gives us the full truth of what God wanted us to hear.

These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may *know* that ye have eternal life, and that ye may *believe* on the name of the Son of God. (1 John 5:13)

The two reasons John wrote this book is so that, “ye may believe” in Jesus, and second, that “ye may know that ye have eternal life.”

Apostle John continues speaking of the believer’s assurance and what God expects of them as his children.

And *we know* that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness. And *we know* that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that *we may know him* that is true, and *we are in him* that is true, *even in his Son Jesus Christ*. This is the true God, and eternal life. Little children keep yourselves from idols. Amen. (1 John 5:19–21)

As a true believer in Christ, our salvation has been secured for eternity; “we are in him.”

Catholic Apologists are good at adding words in between the lines of scripture called human reasoning, philosophy etc., you can't see them in there or find them but they allow Catholics to over-ride the words printed on the page right in front of them called "God's word."

Apostle John also knew exactly how to communicate what God wanted his followers to know. He knew Jesus personally and was writing under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit.

**Beaumont**

"Even if John did write his first epistle to communicate assurance of future salvation to us and others ... such assurance is not said to be based on belief alone—nor is such assurance said to be permanent."

According to Merriam-Webster

Eternal means: "Infinite duration: *everlasting* ... abiding fellowship ... continued without intermission: *perpetual* ... seemingly endless ... existing at all times: *timeless*."

Assurance means: "Being certain in mind ... confidence of mind ... easy freedom from self, doubt ... *security* ... *pledge, guarantee* ... the act of conveying real property ... *insurance*."

Beaumont's argument seems to be falling apart, he appears to be frustrated with the apostle John for writing confusing information or he may be frustrated with the biblical believers who cannot understand his argument.

**Beaumont**

"By the time we reach 1 John 5:13, the author has cited numerous conditions of eternal life that are difficult to assess even personally, much less concerning anyone else."

God's preserved word, the scriptures, are genuine and clear, an individual's understanding may be marred by sin, unbelief, lack of knowledge/seeking and they may not have yet received the genuine baptism of the Holy Spirit.

Jesus shares with his disciples two purposes of the Comforter, the Holy Spirit.

And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may *abide with you forever* ... But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall *teach you all things*, and *bring all things to your remembrance*, whatsoever I have said unto you. (John 14:16, 26; see also 15:26)

The Comforter ... he will *reprove the world of sin* ... *because they believe not on me* ... he will *guide you into all truth* ... he will *shew you, things to come*. (John 16:7–9, 13)

Catholicism never *admits defeat*, even though they have as a witness the Scripture and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Moses and the prophets ... If they hear not ... neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (Luke 16:29, 31)

Jesus shared with the apostles the mystery of the kingdom of God, concerning the truths in the parables, but to those outside the kingdom he did not.

That seeing they may see, and *not perceive*; and hearing they may hear, and *not understand*; lest at any time they should be converted, and *their sins* should be, forgiven them. (Mark 4:12)

### **Beaumont**

“To use 1 John 5:13 to assure others that they have eternal life (or that they will keep it) is therefore unwarranted.

*Don't forget*, according to Douglas Beaumont and the Catholic Church, you can lose your salvation or decide to quit anytime you want, and the title of the article is “Can We Know That We Have Eternal Life (1 John 5:13)?”

The Catholic answer is or seems to be—maybe but then maybe not but hypothetically you can be sure that you can never know for sure if someone else has it.

So, from a Catholic standpoint, do not worry about having an assurance of everlasting life, just stay put in *Mother Church's lap*. Look at everything through the eyes of Catholicism and the Catholic Church. And do not be over-scrupulous concerning your sinful guilt, and do not listen too intently to those who may try to tell you differently.

However, biblically, do listen to the Holy Trinity, which work in tandem, using the law written on your heart and in the Scriptures.

But if *we walk* in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. (1 John 1:7)

My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye *sin not*. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. (1 John 2:1)

Whosoever, abideth in him *sinneth not*: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. Little children let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. *He that committeth sin is of the devil*; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose, the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. *Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin*; for his seed remaineth in him: and *he cannot sin*, because *he is born of God*. (1 John 3:6–9)

Apostle Paul explains our struggle with sin, between the law of the flesh and the law of God.

If then *I do that which I would not*, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, *but sin that dwelleth in me* ... now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, *but sin that dwelleth in me* ... O wretched man that I am! *Who shall deliver me* from the body of this death? I thank God through *Jesus Christ our Lord*. So then with the *mind* I myself serve the *law of God*, But with the *flesh* the *law of sin*. (Rom. 7:16–17, 20, 24–25)

Here is more on how true believers should walk following their salvation.

We know that whosoever is born of God *sinneth not*; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1 John 5:18)

And hereby we do know that we know him if we *keep his commandments*.

He that saith he abideth in him ought also so to *walk, even as he walked*.

*Love not the world*, neither the things that are in the world. If any man, love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

These things have I *written* unto you concerning them that seduce you. But the *anointing* which ye have received of him *abideth in you*, and ye need not that any man, *teach you*. (1 John 2:3, 6, 15, 26–27)

But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother, have need, and *shutteth up his bowels of compassion* from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? My little children let us not *love* in word, neither in tongue, but in, *deed* and in *truth*. (1 John 3:17–18)

*Beloved*, believe not every *spirit*, but try the *spirits* whether they are of *God*: because many *false prophets* are gone out into the world. (1 John 4:1)

Past and living Pontiffs have, or are, working toward establishing a “spiritual” *unity with all religions*. However, the group which Pontiff Francis seems to be the most concerned with are the biblical Christians, who are working to lead Catholics and all men, women, and children to Christ.

Catholics and or Catholic apologists are constantly trying to prove that what biblical Christians teach concerning salvation, is simply wrong, simply false because of ignorance, and simply without common sense or reasoning.

Biblical Christians are constantly trying to teach the simple Gospel of salvation through faith in Jesus's death, burial, and resurrection apart from good works and according to the scriptures, apart from the traditions of men.

Beloved, *let us love* one another: for love is of God; and everyone that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. (1 John 4:7)

If we receive the witness of men, *the witness of God is greater*: for this is the witness of God which, he hath testified of his Son. He that *believeth* on the *Son of God* hath the *witness* in himself. (1 John 5:9–10)

Since the death of Christ, the *assurance of the believer's salvation* and the *gift of eternal life* comes from God's word and God the Holy Spirit. God's witness is true and greater than man's, whether they be Pastors, Priests, Pontiffs, so called Church Fathers, Saints or a Women called, The Blessed Virgin Mary.

*He that believeth not* God hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son. And this is the record, that God hath given to us *eternal life*, and this life is *in his Son*. He that *hath* the Son *hath* life; and he that *hath not* the Son of God *hath not* life. These things have I *written* unto you that *believe* on the name of the Son of God; that ye may *know* that ye have *eternal life*, and that ye may *believe* on the name of the Son of God. And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (1 John 5:10–15)

It is according to God's will that we be saved through believing, in other words, through faith. Ask him to save you; he will hear you because he is not a liar. You will receive assurance from God's written word and the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. As Peter wrote, God does not want anyone to *perish*.



*The Lord* is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is *longsuffering* to us-ward, *not willing that any should perish*, but that all should come *to repentance*. (2 Pet. 3:9)

Priest, Mitch Pacwa, SJ, is described as an “internationally acclaimed biblical scholar, TV personality, and author, who presents a free, one-hour webcast.

During his program, *Scripture and Tradition*, dated 2/12/2019, he shared about God’s love and concern for us and our place and time in history. He shared that Jesus’s time on earth was well planned out, which I agree. It is clearly laid out in scripture in minute detail, and as recorded in scripture, it was 100 percent carried out.

*But then Pacwa* goes on to share that God did not do so for us; our existence was by total happenstance and without any forethought: “*We all just happen to be born the way we are, with our different shape and size, color, time and place all by accident.*”

However, God is very, concerned about our souls and where each of us will spend eternity. As stated by Apostle Peter, God is not willing that any of us should perish. This next verse shows how God placed us at a time and place that would provide us with the best opportunity to accomplish this. Let us see what Luke wrote in Acts about Apostle Paul’s message at Mar’s Hill.

*In, the midst of Mar’s Hill ...* For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, *TO THE UNKOWN GOD*. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you ... *God* that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in *temples* made with hands. (Acts 17:22–24)

God dwells in temples made with *his* hands, in those who have surrendered their lives to Jesus. God dwells in their hearts, minds, bodies, and souls. True believers are God’s temple. Apostle Paul shares on this subject with the Church at Corinth.

Know ye not that *ye* are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in *you*? If any man, defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple *ye* are. (1 Cor. 3:16–17)

Peter also speaks of God’s nearness and availability in Acts.

*Neither is worshipped with men’s hands, as though he needed anything, seeing he giveth to all life ... breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us.* (Acts 17:25–27)

Again, all “*these things*” mentioned by Beaumont in 1 John are requirements or possessions of believers or ought to be the results manifested in the lives of believers who possess eternal life.

Do you want to possess Catholicism and all she requires and teaches, or do you want to possess eternal life through faith in Jesus Christ?

Jesus has commanded his followers to love, and he has given us a helper, the Holy Spirit. The Spirit is given to believers to guide and strengthen them to accomplish “these things.”

Are you waiting and searching for forgiveness and perfect love? Then, come and surrender to Jesus.

When Constantine, the Roman Emperor, went out, conquering other nations and peoples, they all were brought into the Catholic Church. When the Spanish ruler went out to conquer in South America, this was also the practice. Jesus wants a spiritual conquering, which comes through a humble repentant heart of faith.

Apostle Peter declared the surety of our salvation.

*Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the \*resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, who*

are *kept* by the power of God through *faith* unto *salvation* ready to be revealed in the *last time*. (1 Pet. 1:3–5)

Peter’s comment above presents a substantial proof for the biblical Gospel of salvation. There is no mention of the unbloody sacrifice of the Mass, of the requirement of good works for salvation, or that there is absolutely no assurance of salvation. There is also no mention of the Eucharist.

*Peter’s focus* is on God’s mercy, our being born again, our new lively hope, Jesus’s resurrection, our inheritance in heaven as being incorruptible, undefiled, unfading, and reserved in heaven, and finally we are kept by God’s power through faith.

*I am all in*, committed to God the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit. I can only say thank you, thank you, thank you. I dare not ask whether there is anything I need to do or that I can contribute toward my salvation.

*Are you all in for Jesus?* This next person was not, and he still came to the wedding!

And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had *not on* a wedding garment: And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither *not having* a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, *Bind, him* hand and foot, and *take him* away, and *cast him* into outer darkness; *there shall be* weeping and gnashing of teeth. For *many are called*, but *few are* chosen. (Matt. 22:11–14)

In the Scriptures, wedding clothes and white robes represent Jesus’s righteousness that is the ultimate and only possible covering for sin. Any additions to it would insult the payment he made for us with his sinless blood.

This next lady got it right!

“Keep Your Fork, the Best is Yet to Come!”

Seen on Facebook (Author and date not known or given).

“There was a Christian lady who was diagnosed with a terminal illness, and ... given three months to live ... she contacted her pastor and had him come to her house ... ‘This is very important,’ ... ‘I want to be buried with a fork in my right hand ... The women explained, ‘In all my years of attending church socials and potluck dinners, I always remember that

when the dishes of the main courses were being cleared, someone would inevitably lean over and say, ‘Keep your fork.’ It was my favorite part because I knew that something better was coming ... The pastor’s eyes welled up with tears of joy as he hugged the woman good-bye. He knew this would be one of the last times he would see her before her death. But he also knew that the woman had a better grasp of Heaven ... She Knew that something better was coming. At her funeral ... Over and over, the pastor heard the question ‘What’s with the fork?’ And over and over he smiled ... So, the next time you reach down for your fork, let it remind you ever so gently, that the best is yet to come ... Nothing scary. Nothing unknown. Jesus Christ is right there with us all the way.”

“Saved by The Cross,” by Priest Harrison Ayre of the Diocese of Victoria, British Columbia, presented by Michael Heinlein of Simply Catholic.

“While we are familiar with the idea that the Cross saves, perhaps we are unfamiliar with how the Cross accomplishes salvation—How does the Cross save us? There are two aspects ... What happens on the Cross, and how that is extended to us?

“Sacramentally united to *Jesus by Baptism*, we are conformed to *Jesus* so that He *lives* out the Mystery of his Life, death, and resurrection *in us*, and *gives us The Sacraments as the Principal means of encountering that salvation. (emphasis added)*

“Encountered continually today, in Mystery through The Sacramental Life of The Church—by which we are given the grace to be saved.” — *Simply Catholic*

This sacramental life presents Catholicism in its *simplicity and mystery*. However, the *mystery* of the Cross with salvation by God’s grace through faith is even *simpler*. The Apostle Paul said it well, “We preach Christ Jesus the Lord.”

We have this Ministry ... *we* have received mercy, *we*, faint not; but have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, *not* walking in craftiness, *nor* handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. But if our *\*gospel* be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world (Satan) hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious *\*gospel* of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

For we preach not *ourselves*, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and *ourselves* your *servants* for Jesus's sake. For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, *hath* shined in our hearts, *to give* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the *face* of Jesus Christ. (2 Cor. 4:1–6)

(For we walk by *faith*, not by *sight*;) We are *confident*, I say, and *willing* rather to be *absent* from the body, and to be *present* with the Lord. (2 Cor. 5:7–8)

For we are *members* of his body, of *his flesh*, and of *his bones*. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a *great mystery*: But I speak concerning *Christ and the Church*. (Eph. 5:30–32)

The Church is made up of each individual believer, it is not a political or denominational entity. And the believing individuals of Christ's church have Christ in them, which is their hope of glory.

Praying always ... And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may *open my mouth boldly*, to make known the *mystery* of the *\*gospel*. (Eph. 6:18–19)

Even the *mystery* which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but *now* is made manifest to his saints: To whom God, would *make known*

what is the riches of the glory of this *mystery* among the Gentiles; which is *Christ in you*, the *hope* of glory. (Col. 1:26–27)

That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the *full assurance* of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the *mystery* of God, and of the Father, and of Christ. (Col. 2:2)

And without controversy great is the *mystery of godliness: God* was *manifest* in the flesh, *justified*, in the Spirit, *seen*, of angels, *preached*, unto the Gentiles, *believed*, on in the world, *received* up into glory. (1 Tim. 3:16)

*Catholicism* preaches Catholicism and that the mystery of God’s saving grace, comes through the Eucharistic Jesus, and through faith in the sacraments.

*Biblical Christianity* preaches Jesus’s sacrifice on the Cross and that the revealed mystery of God’s saving grace comes through faith in Jesus Christ the Lord.

About Catholics Team, “What is the Catholic Church?”

Gleanings:

The Church is a global diverse community, over a billion strong, encompassing a wide spectrum of political beliefs yet united by the same central/focal point of religious belief/faith or written creeds.

The Church is Christian and synonymous with Christianity, *being first*, the Catholic Church is Christianity all other groups have splintered away.

The Church is a worldwide group with a leadership structure of servant-leaders encompassed by the *ritual*/Sacrament of Holy Orders being ordained/commissioned to be Priest. This priesthood carries the responsibility of acting in the place of Jesus and is the continuation of Jesus’s tradition of choosing men to be his apostles who would carry on his mission.

The Church is re-presenting Jesus sacrifice on the cross through its priesthood in the Eucharistic liturgy/Mass which is the focal role of its establishment. Catholics gather-together at each mass to worship Jesus as the priest consecrates the bread and wine into Jesus body and blood which is then consumed; Thus, completing the *ritual*/Sacrament of Holy Communion which is the center of Catholic faith and worship.

The Church also through the *ritual*/Sacrament of Baptism are expected and responsible as called priest, prophet, and king to carry on Jesus work.

The Church, like all institutions, deals with bad leaders and failing leadership but our faith and hope in Jesus Christ, remains, and holds us together.



## *Chapter Four*

# THE ROLE OF THE CATECHISM OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH

**W**e learned about what heaven will be like and whether you can have assurance of everlasting life in the past three chapters. Now in chapters four and five, we will look at the role of the Catholic Catechism and the Bible to see which is your best or winning choice in regard to eternity. In chapter six, we will compare the *two* most prominent Gospels in Christendom.

The Paulist Fathers established the “Paulist National Catholic Evangelization” ... 1984 – 1999 – “Another Look,” a national ministry to inactive Catholics ... PNCEA. In 2009 the “PNCEA” adopted a new name and logo and became known as “Paulist Evangelization Ministries (PEM).”

I wrote the following letter in 1988 to “Another Look” to find out what needed to be believed to be a Catholic.

Another Look,<sup>34</sup>

I receive your newsletter and find it interesting. Articles that I am interested in seeing in your newsletter include: What does a person need to believe in order to be a (Roman) Catholic? And what can a Catholic do to give himself the greatest amount of assurance of attaining heaven?

Thank you for your interest in me. If you do not address these questions in your next newsletter, could you please send an answer to me soon. These are two questions that have me puzzled.

Thank you,

*Gary Westgerdes*



The Response

**NATIONAL CATHOLIC EVANGELIZATION ASSOCIATION**

3031 Fourth Street, N.E. Washington, D.C. 20017— (202) 832–5022—Under the  
Direction of the Paulist Fathers.

22 January 1988  
Gary Westgerdes  
Box 83  
Montezuma, OH 45866

**Dear Mr. Westgerdes,**

Thank you for your letter of January 3, 1988.

What does a person need to believe in order to be a Catholic? Great question!  
Unfortunately, a simple answer in a one-page letter is impossible, considering all the  
scholarship and debates surrounding this issue.

I would like to suggest that you contact a priest in your area. Make an appointment  
and let him know what you want to discuss. Also, you might want to consider reading  
the following two books:

*Basics of the Faith: A Catholic Catechism* by Dr. Alan Schreck. Ann Arbor: Servant  
Publications, 1987.

*Understanding Catholicism* by Dr. Monika Hellwig. Mahwah NJ: Paulist Press.

Hope this will help. God bless you.

Sincerely, *Mr. Thomas D. Carter*, Programs Coordinator.

Inviting the 75,000,000 unchurched Americans and the 15,000,000 inactive Catholics  
to be enriched by Jesus Christ within the Catholic family of believers.

---

In response to my own letter, this Gospel was compiled in 2011 from the Catechism  
of the Catholic Church © 1994. My goal was to express the Catholic Gospel truthfully  
and clearly, so that both Catholics and non-Catholics may see for themselves what is  
taught and compare it with the Scriptures.

Catechism Quotes are followed by (CCC-####) Any clarification articles will be  
clearly noted.

I have used within the Scripture and Catechism quotes, *italics* for (*added emphasis*).

The asterisk seen in Scripture and Catechism quotes is there to identify these as *the \*Keys of Heaven* for the respective Gospels.

**“New Catechism**—Archbishop of Paris Jean-Marie Lustiger holds up a copy of the Roman Catholic Church’s first new catechism in 426 years during a news conference Monday in Paris. The 676-page guideline on doctrine is *a major push to strengthen the church’s presence worldwide.*”  
(*emphasis added*)

AP Photo caption, “New Catechism,” *The Daily Standard*, November 17, 1992, 6.

## **“THE ROLE OF THE CATECHISM OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH”**<sup>35</sup>

This catechism, spearheaded by Pontiff John Paul II, was published, and copyrighted in 1994.

### **A BRIEF HISTORY OF CATECHISMS**

The catechisms of the Catholic Church are an important tool to teach Church beliefs. The catechisms quote from many “encyclicals, church council documents,” as well as the Scriptures. These are the major references or starting points used to develop Catholic teachings. A catechism, unlike the Bible, is not inspired by the Holy Spirit. Like a tool, the catechism is a handy go-to as a consolidation of Catholic Church teachings.

In 1566 the first Catholic catechism was published. It came after the Council of Trent and was named, the *Roman Catechism*. A new universal catechism was not published until 1994, and it was named *The Catechism of the Catholic Church*.

### **THE PURPOSE OF THE CATECHISM**

Its primary function is “to explain the teachings of the Catholic faith.” It makes a wonderful source for all non-Catholics to see and read what the Catholic Church really teaches. All issues, arguments, and misunderstandings concerning Roman Catholic doctrines and beliefs may be resolved by reading the catechism.

The Catechism of The Catholic Church (CCC) says:

“The Church’s message ‘is true and solid ... one and the same way of *Salvation* appears throughout the Whole World” (CCC-174).  
(*emphasis added*)

## IS THERE ONLY ONE CATECHISM?

“There is only one official Catechism of the Catholic Church,” which was adapted to meet the different age groups represented in the Church.

## DO CATHOLICS BELIEVE THE CATECHISM IS LIKE THE BIBLE?

“Catholics do not.

## WHY UPDATE THE CATECHISM?

The Catholic Church claims that her teachings do not change, but they do admit that their “understanding of the revelation of Jesus Christ can develop.” An example of this would be issues that come up during the present day, such as the killing of unborn children in the womb and the advancements in warfare such as nuclear weapons.

“*The \*Church ... guards ‘The faith ...’ teaches ... the language of faith ... introduce(s) ... the understanding and the life of faith*” (CCC-171).  
(*emphasis added*)

## HOW CAN I READ THE CATECHISM?

The Catholic Church wants the Catechism to be made available to everyone. It may be purchased, downloaded to Kindle, or read on the Vatican website.

“*Sacred Tradition ... Scriptures and the Magisterium of the Church ... One ... cannot stand without the others ... all contribute to the Salvation of Souls*” (CCC-95). (*emphasis added*)



## Chapter Five

# THE ROLE OF THE BIBLE FOR BIBLICAL BELIEVERS <sup>36</sup>

### A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE BIBLE

**A**s shared earlier, Jesus presents the account of Lazarus and the rich man and the importance of the scriptures.

Abraham saith unto him, They, have *Moses and the prophets*; let them hear them. And he said ... but if one went unto them from the dead, they will, repent. And he said unto him, If, they hear not *Moses and the prophets*; neither will they, be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (*Moses and the Prophets*, representing the Old Testament; Luke 16:29–31)

In regard to the phrase “*As it is written*,” it appears fourteen times in the KJV Old Testament.

Jesus warns and assures us that God is in control.

“Heaven and earth shall pass away: but *my words* shall not pass away”  
(Luke 21:33).

God has given to us the holy Scriptures to live by, to guide us and to instruct us throughout our life. God the Holy Spirit, as our Helper, uses the Scriptures to accomplish this (John 16:13). God uses the phrase “as it is written” thirty-one times in the New Testament to teach us to use the Scriptures.

Jesus quoted the Scriptures to defeat and rebuke Satan after he spent forty days and forty nights in the wilderness fasting. Satan came to Jesus three times, twisting the Scriptures, trying to get Jesus to falter in his humanity and weakened state. Jesus stood firm against the wiles and temptations of the devil, defeating him handily at his false reasoning and promises (Matt. 4:1–10).

Jesus gives a final rebuke to the Devil.

Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou, shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. (Matt. 4:10)

This presents a dilemma; are Catholics serving Catholicism and the Blessed Virgin Mary? If so, they have a choice, they can either convert and serve God, reading and obeying the Scriptures as Jesus did, or they can continue down the broad path that they have found comfortable, serving Catholicism in its ecumenism with the world's religions and serving Mary by praying the rosary.

God's Word, the Scriptures, were written through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit for both the Old and New Testaments. They were written as an assured message from God that would never pass away.

Jesus saith—*Blessed* are they that have not seen, and yet have believed. And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name. (John 20:29–31)

God has authored the Bible, using faithful servants throughout history. Many look to the King James Version as the true and God preserved Word of God in English and as others have pointed out, this is significant as we await Christ return and as English continues to become the world's universal language.

## **THE PURPOSE OF THE BIBLE**

The Scriptures declare that the Bible's purpose is for preaching, teaching, and warning.

For Christ sent me ... to *preach* the \*gospel ... the *preaching* of the cross ... the *foolishness of preaching* to save them that believe ... we *preach* Christ crucified. (1 Cor. 1:17–18, 21, 23)

Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the *words of eternal life*. (John 6:68)

They that were scattered abroad went everywhere *preaching the word*. (Acts 8:4)

In the *last days*, perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous ... disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection ... despisers of those that are good, traitors ... lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away ... ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth—*Preach the word* ... with all longsuffering and *doctrine*. For *the time will come* when they will not endure *sound doctrine*. (2 Tim. 3:1–5, 7; 4:2–3)

## IS THERE ONLY ONE BIBLE?

Men have produced many new Bible translations since the King James Version (KJV). The KJV is copyright free, it reads nicer, and some say it is easier to memorize. Some may struggle with it at first as I did, but the Holy Spirit gives understanding.

In the dash to ecumenism and the reversal of the reformation, newer versions are using the same manuscripts as the Catholic Church, one of which is the New International Version (NIV). These new translations are being or have been patterned after the Catholic version, minus only the Apocrypha.

The New International Version, Translator Preface

“The Committee held to certain goals for the NIV: that it be an Accurate, Beautiful, Clear, and Dignified translation suitable for public and private reading, teaching, preaching, memorizing, and *liturgical use*. (*emphasis added*)

“The translators’ work didn’t end when the NIV was published in 1978. The original mandate, given in 1965, was to continue the work of Bible translation, ensuring that the NIV always reflects the very best of biblical scholarship and contemporary English. The NIV saw its first major update in 1984 and was again refreshed for modern language in 2011. The Committee on Bible Translation still *meets every year*, reviewing the work in painstaking detail—because when translating God’s Word, it’s all about *getting the words right*.” (*emphasis added*)

*Westgerdes*—Man is supposedly *getting* the words *right*, while God is *keeping* his word *right*.

## EXAMPLES

Along with the NIV and NIRV, the Catholic Bible, the New American Bible Revised Edition (NABRE), has also been updated to support the idea of an ongoing salvation that involves faith, with a life of continuous good works to “achieve” salvation. This view is supported by verses that use the phrase “we are being saved,” while the KJV uses “we are saved.” The C-RV Challoner-Rheims Version is a Catholic version translated from the Latin Vulgate and is a revision published in 1941; it also uses “we are saved,” and in some instances reads the same as the KJV. The verses in question are:

1 Corinthians 1:18 “The preaching (or message) of the cross to us who:  
KJV, C-RV “are saved” NIV, NIRV, NABRE “being saved”

1 Corinthians 15:2 “The gospel, by which also you:  
KJV, NIV, NIRV “are saved” NABRE, C-RV “being saved.”

2 Corinthians 2:15 “To God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that:  
KJV, C-RV “are saved” NIV, NIRV, NABRE “are being saved”

Acts 2:47 “... the Lord added to the church daily such as should:  
KJV, C-RV “be saved” NIV, NIRV, NABRE “being saved”

1 Corinthians 15:1–4 KJV “I declare unto you the \*gospel ... By which also:  
KJV, NIV, NIRV “ye are saved” NABRE, C-RV “are being saved”

The inconsistencies in the new versions are seen in these following verses. Instead of a clear separation between the KJV “are saved” and the NIV “being saved” which denotes a salvation of faith plus works without any present assurance, now the KJV, NIV and others are agreeing in these verses:

2 Thessalonians 2:8–10 “received not the love of the truth, that they:  
KJV, NIV, NABRE, C-RV “be saved,” NIRV “would save”

Ephesians 2:5 “we ... dead in sins ... quickened ... with Christ:  
KJV “are saved” NIV, NABRE, C-RV “been saved” NRIV “has saved”

Ephesians 2:8 “For by grace (God’s) ... through faith:  
KJV “are ye saved” NIV, NABRE, C-RV “have been saved” NRIV  
“has saved”

Which then is correct? The consistent revelation of scripture is that “we are saved” through faith in Christ.

And when they shall say unto you, *seek*, unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep, and that mutter: *should not a people seek unto their God?* For the living to the dead? To the law and to the testimony: *if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.* (Isa. 8:19–20; see also Ps. 119: 130; Prov. 6:30)

## **THE BIBLE SHOULD NOT BE UPDATED**

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou, shalt preserve them from this generation forever.*



All thy commandments *are* faithful ... For ever, *O LORD*, thy, *word* is settled in heaven ... Thy *word is true* from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments *endureth for ever*. (Ps. 12:6–7; 119:86, 89, 160)

Jesus—Heaven and earth shall pass away, but *my words shall not pass away*. (Luke 21:33; Mark 13:31; Matt. 24:35; read also Isa. 40:8; 1 Pet. 1:23–25; Rom. 15:4; 1 Cor. 15:3–4)

## **READ THE BIBLE FOR WISDOM AND EVERYDAY GUIDANCE, WITH YOUR WHOLE HEART**

Gleaned from Psalm 119 some responses and benefits by and for those who know God’s Word. *Thy Word I: Hid* in mine heart. (v. 11); *Order my steps*. (v. 133); *Loveth it*. (v. 140); *Was grieved, because they kept not*. (v. 158); *Esteem ... hate every false way*. (v. 128); *Standeth in awe*. (v. 161); *Rejoice ... as one that findeth great spoil*. (v. 162)

## **THE WORK OF THE HOLY SPIRIT**

The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the *Holy Ghost*. (Rom. 5:5)

Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the *Holy Ghost*. (Rom. 15:13)

Be *not* deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. *And such were some of you*: but ye are washed—sanctified—justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the *Spirit* of our God.

For by *one Spirit* are we all *baptized into one body*, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; *and have been all made to drink into one Spirit*. (1 Cor. 6:9–11; 12:13; see also 6:19–20; Eph. 1:12; 5:9)

For we through the *Spirit* wait for the hope of righteousness by faith— This I say then, Walk, in the *Spirit*, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh—If we live in the *Spirit*, let us also walk in the *Spirit*. (Gal. 5:5, 16, 25)

And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the *word* in much affliction, with *joy* of the *Holy Ghost*. (1 Thess. 1:6)

Quench not the *Spirit* (1 Thess. 5:19).

The *English Oxford Living Dictionary* defines the word *quench* as **2.1** “Stifle or suppress” **2.2** “Reduce (someone) to silence” **3.** “Rapidly cool” **3.1** “Suppress or damp (an effect such as luminescence ...)” *Origin* “... (... ‘put out, extinguish’), of Germanic origin.”

Now the *Spirit* speaketh expressly. (1 Tim. 4:1)

The Spirit has a voice, and we as Bible-believing Christians can expect to hear his voice.

Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. *That good thing* which was committed unto thee keep by the *Holy Ghost* which dwelleth in us. (2 Tim. 1:13, 14)

*Not* by works of righteousness which *we* have done, but according to *his* mercy, he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the *Holy Ghost*. (Titus 3:5)

Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ ... through sanctification of the *Spirit* ... *preached* the \**gospel* unto you with the *Holy Ghost* sent down from heaven. (1 Pet. 1:1–2, 12)

Peter has recorded the Christians' purpose and goal to preach the gospel of Jesus Christ with the Holy Ghost. Next this is followed by godliness which is evidenced in love for the brethren, the members of the Church family.

Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the *Spirit* unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart *fervently: being born again*, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, *by the word of God, which liveth and abideth forever.* (1 Pet. 1:22)

Jesus speaks to the Churches, referring to each individual member.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the *Spirit* saith unto the churches; *To him that overcometh* will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is, in the midst of the paradise of God ... *he that overcometh* shall not be hurt of the second death ... *to him that overcometh* will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth *it.* (Rev. 2:7, 11, 17)

*He that overcometh*, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the *Spirit* saith unto the churches. . . .These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast *kept my word*, and hast *not denied my name.* Behold, *I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie.* (Rev. 3:5–9)

Jesus speaks to the Churches concerning those who overcome during the tribulation period.

Behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man, take thy crown. *Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.* He that hath an ear, let him hear what the *Spirit* saith unto the churches. . . . These things *saith the Amen*, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So, because thou art lukewarm . . . I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and *that* the shame of thy nakedness do not appear . . . and anoint thine eyes with eye salve, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten, be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man, hear my voice, and open the door, I will come into him, and will sup with him, and he with me. *To him that overcometh* will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the *Spirit* saith unto the churches. (Rev. 3:9–22)

Apostle John questions an angel concerning a scene he sees in heaven.

What are these which are arrayed in white robes? And whence came they? . . . These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the *blood* of the Lamb. Therefore, are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They

shall hunger no more, neither thirst anymore; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb, which is in-the-midst-of the throne, shall feed them and shall lead them unto living fountains of water: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes. (Rev. 7:13–14)

The Holy Trinity of God is seen here as the Apostle Paul sets the record straight for Church leaders, all believers are established in Christ, are anointed of God and are sealed by the Holy Spirit. Church leaders should not and do not have dominion over the believer's faith; they are instead, to be helpers of their joy.

Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God, Who, hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the *Spirit* in our hearts. Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as, yet unto Corinth. *Not for that we have dominion over your faith but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.*" (2 Cor. 1:21–24)



## Chapter Six

# CATHOLIC OR CHRISTIAN AND THE GOSPEL COMPARISON

**B**iblical Gospel—Scripture: King James Version  
Catholicism’s Gospel—Catechism of the Catholic Church © 1994

“The Epistle of Ignatius to the Smyrnaeans” —first written mention of the Catholic Church.<sup>37</sup>

“Chapter 8. Let nothing be done without the bishop”

“See that you all *follow the bishop*, even as Jesus Christ does the Father— Let no man do anything connected with the Church without the bishop. Let that be deemed a proper *Eucharist*, which is [administered] either by the bishop, or by one to whom he has entrusted it. Wherever the bishop shall appear, there let the multitude [of the people] also be; even as wherever *Jesus Christ* is, there is *the Catholic Church*.” —*New Advent*

“The combination ‘the Catholic Church’ (he *katholike ekklesia*) is found for the first time in the letter of St. Ignatius to the Smyrnaeans [8:1–2] written about the year [AD] 110. ... 23) ‘Now it [the Church] is called Catholic because it is throughout the world ... But the real strength of the argument lies in the patristic evidence.’” —*New Advent, The Catholic Encyclopedia*

The first written evidence of an entity or group called “Christians” is found in Scripture.

When they heard these things, they ... glorified God, saying, Then, hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life. Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and *Antioch*, *preaching the word* to ... the Jews only. And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which, when they were come to *Antioch*, spake unto the Grecians, *preaching the Lord Jesus*. And the hand of the Lord was with them: and *a great number believed and turned unto the Lord*. Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as *Antioch*. Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord, For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul (Paul): And when he had found him, he brought him unto *Antioch*. And it came to pass, that *a whole year* they assembled themselves with the church and taught much people. *And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch*. (Acts 11:18–26)

The following sermon is found at “Regina Prophetarum, Traditional Sermons for Traditional Catholics.” It was given two weeks after Easter on April 26, 2020, 35:24 minutes.

“To Whose Voice Shall We Open Up Our Souls to Lead Us?”

The Catholic sermon begins by mentioning Alex Jones, a radio talk show host, and Jim Jones the leader of a cult at Jonestown in 1978 and how they both used fear to impress and gather followers. Mention is also made of today’s health pandemic, COVID–19. Here are excerpts from a “Summary” of the message.

“About all that is going on today, it is hard to be certain. It is messy. It is confused ... and perplexing at times. We must be patient. There is,

however, something we can be very certain about. It is our faith and how it works. Faith is based on authority from above. It is founded on God ... because He said so. It is faith that keeps the antichrist at bay and wards off all the evils in the world. It is faith that tells us that the devil and all his minions cannot do anything without God's permission.

“Let us not give way to some ... over, simplification or allowing the sophistic-like-media be our shepherds, men whose tongue is their strength but have no license from God to speak. Instead, let's ... (use) *solid philosophical principles of truth and causality* ... Let us not lose sight that *there are two eternities ... one up and one down*, and we must be led in either direction. Whose voice, therefore, are you opening-up soul to hear? *Only one voice* has connections to *the keys of the kingdom of heaven.*” (*emphasis added*)  
— Accessed 4/27/2020.

<http://reginaprophetarum.org/audio/20200426-To-Whose-Voice-Shall-We-Open-Up-Our-Souls-to-Lead-us.mp3>.

As you read the Comparison you can quickly confirm the Catechism quotes by searching for, CCC and the number.

## THE COMPARISON

### 1. (Catholicism)

#### Jesus “Opened” The Door to Heaven.

By His *death and resurrection*, Jesus Christ has “*opened*” Heaven to us ... He makes partners in his heavenly glorification *those who have believed in him and remained faithful to his will*. Heaven is the blessed community of all who are *perfectly incorporated into Christ* (CCC-1026). (*emphasis added*)

“*Extra Ecclesiam nulla salus*” —“outside the Church there is no salvation”<sup>38</sup>

“Irenaeus (died A.D. 202) wrote: ‘One should not seek among others the truth that can be easily gotten from the *Church*. For in her, as in



a rich treasury, the apostles have placed all that pertains to truth, so that everyone can drink this beverage of life. She is the *door of life.*” (*emphasis added*) (St. Irenaeus of Lyons. *Against Heresies*, III. 4). — *Orthodox Church Quotes*

## 1. (Biblical)

### Jesus “IS” The Door to and of Heaven!

Baptism is described as a door by the Catholic Church (CCC-846). Jesus describes himself as the Door to heaven.

God’s Son Jesus confirms his status as our Saviour.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber ... Verily, verily, I say unto you, *I am the door* of the sheep—*I am the door*: if any man, enter in, he shall be *saved*, and shall go in and out, and find pasture—I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd *giveth his life* for the sheep—My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: And I *give* unto them *eternal life*; and they shall *never perish*, neither shall any *man pluck* them out of my hand. My Father, which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able, *to pluck them* out of my Father’s hand. (John 10:1, 7–11, 14–18, 27–29)

Apostle Paul writes about Jesus our Great Shepherd.

Now the God of peace, that brought again *\*from the dead* our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the *blood* of the everlasting covenant, Make, you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through *Jesus Christ*; to whom *be glory* for ever and ever. Amen. (Heb. 13:20–21)

Apostle Peter refers to Jesus as our Savior.

To them that have obtained like *precious faith* with us *through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ*: Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, according as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him* that hath called us to *glory and virtue*: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be *partakers of the divine nature*, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. (2 Pet. 1:1–4)

2. (Catholicism)  
**Church--Foundation--Salvation**

The *\*Church* is apostolic ... built on a lasting foundation: “the twelve apostles of the Lamb” (*Rev 21:14*) ... indestructible (*cf. Mt 16:18*) ... upheld infallibly in truth: *Christ governs her through Peter and the other apostles, who are present in their successors, the Pope and the college of bishops* (CCC-869). (*emphasis added*)

The Lord made *St. Peter the visible foundation of his \*Church*. He entrusted the keys of the Church to him. (CCC-936). (*emphasis added*)

[*The \*Church*] Has Received *The \*keys of the Kingdom of heaven* so that in Her, sins may be forgiven through Christ’s blood and the Holy Spirit’s action. In this *\*Church*, the soul dead through sin comes back to life in order to live with Christ, whose grace has saved us {526 St Augustine, *Sermo* 214, 11: PL 38, 1071–1072} (CCC-981). (*emphasis added*)



*The Pope* enjoys, by divine institution, “supreme, full, immediate, and universal power in the care of souls (CCC-937). (*emphasis added*)

*Inside the Vatican Magazine*—Since 1993.  
A letter received by Gary Westgerdes multiple times.

Spring 2013

“Dear Friend in Christ,<sup>39</sup>

“The Pope is the most important man in the world, without question!  
He’s far more important than any other religious figure, or any president, prime minister, king, billionaire, CEO, writer, artist, scientist, inventor, or celebrity we could ever name.

*“No one on earth even comes close to the Holy Father in importance. He carries on His shoulders the spiritual welfare of 1.3 billion Catholics, plus that of countless non-Catholics who admire him. Billions of people respect his words. Hundreds of millions pray for him. His actions guide the world’s greatest body of believers and affect the course of world history.” —Robert B. Moynihan, PH.D.*

Check out also a secular view of the Pontiff’s importance.

“Why is the Pope so important?” —Yann Peze, *Quora*, August 28, 2018

“Here are 10 official titles of Pope Francis and their meaning.<sup>40</sup>

1. *Pope*: Italian for **papa**. First used in the 6th century. Describes the Pope as the Churches father hence, the **Holy Father**.
2. *Pontifex Maximus*: **Pons**, Latin for **bridge**. Denoting a “**bridge builder**.”
3. *Summus Pontifex*: Refers to the Churches **highest priest**.
4. *Pontiff*: From *pontifex*. Also referring to the **highest priest**, leading to such titles as “**supreme pontiff** or the **Roman pontiff**.”

5. *Servant of the Servants of God*: “Adopted by St. Gregory the Great in 602.” It represents “the pope’s role as a **servant** to the people of God” as he imitates Jesus Christ.
6. *Vicar of Christ*: Added in the 5th century “by St. Leo the Great” reminding faithful Catholics about “the pope’s role as **an earthly representative whom Jesus appoints to shepherd his flock.**”
7. *Sovereign of the Vatican City State*: Give recognition to the Pope as “**leader of the Vatican City State.**”
8. *Bishop of Rome*: Used since St. Peter “for his role as the **local bishop of the city of Rome.**”
9. *Primate of Italy*: Historically, each region of governing of the Church has a “primate,” referring to “the **first or primary** leader of the Church in that specific area.”
10. *His Holiness*: A title which is commonly used “**when addressing the pope,**” but it is used also to address “other religious leaders in the English language.”

The Second Vatican Council’s *Decree on Ecumenism* explains: “For it is through Christ’s \**Catholic Church alone* which is the universal help toward salvation, that the fullness of the means of salvation can be obtained. It was to the *apostolic college alone* of which Peter is the head, that we believe that our Lord entrusted all the blessings of the New Covenant, in order to *establish on earth*, the one body of Christ into which *all those should be fully incorporated* who belong in *any way* to the people of God (CCC-816). (*emphasis added*)

Scrolling down you will see a book by Trent Horn titled, *Why We’re Catholic: Our Reasons*.<sup>41</sup>

Book description: “Why—(God) inspired a holy book and founded an infallible Church—?”

To reunite all his children, scattered and led astray by sin, the Father willed to call the whole of humanity together into his *Son’s Church*. The \**Church* is the place where humanity *must rediscover its unity and salvation*. *The Church* is “*the world reconciled.*” ... she is prefigured by *Noah’s ark*, which *alone* saves from *the flood*. {334 St. Augustine,

*Serm.* 96, 7, 9: PL 38, 588; St. Ambrose, *De virg.* 18, 118: PL 16, 297; cf. already *1 Pet* 3:20–21} (CCC-845). (*emphasis added*)

“*Outside the \*Church there is no salvation.*” ... Re-formulated positively, it means that *all salvation comes* from Christ the Head *through the Church* which is his Body: Basing itself on *scripture and tradition* the Council teaches that the *\*Church ... is necessary for salvation ... which men enter through \*Baptism as through a door ...* Hence, they could not be saved who, knowing that the *\*Catholic Church* was founded as *necessary* by God through Christ, would refuse either to enter it or to remain in it (CCC-846). (*emphasis added*)

“What is Absolutely Necessary?”<sup>42</sup>

“Q. *What is absolutely necessary for me to be saved?* Teresa, via email

“A. In Hebrews 11:6 we read what seems to be a minimal answer: ‘For anyone who approaches God must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who seek him.’

“The Church teaches that outside the Church there is no salvation ... It does mean, first, that salvation is available only through Jesus Christ. It means further that wherever the grace of Christ operates, it always works in His mystical body, the Church.

“Non-Catholic entities can be a means of salvation because what they teach is Catholic truth. However, to have access to the fullness of grace ... one must be a member of ‘the one true Church, the Catholic Church.’

“‘Even if one is fully incorporated into the Church and accepts all her teachings and her guidance, that does not guarantee salvation ... one who does not ... persevere in charity [in love and service of the Lord Jesus Christ] is not saved.’” —*Catholic Answers*

## 2. (Biblical)

### **Jesus—Foundation—Salvation**

Prophet Isaiah writes about his personal relationship with God, the LORD Jehovah.

Behold, God is *my salvation*; I will trust, and not be afraid: for the *LORD Jehovah* is *my strength* and *my song*; he also is become *my salvation*.  
(Isa. 12:2)

Jesus calls us to be servants.

Be not ye called *Rabbi*: for one is your *Master*, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your *father* upon the earth: for one is your *Father*, which is in heaven ... But *he that is greatest among you shall be your servant*. (Matt. 23:8–9, 11)

According to the grace of God, which is given unto me, as a wise master builder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. For other *foundation* can no man lay than that is laid, which is *Jesus Christ* ... *let no man Glory in Men*. (1 Cor. 3:10–11, 21)

Be faithful to Jesus as Jesus was to God the Father.

Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and *High Priest* of our profession, *Christ Jesus*, who was *faithful* to him that appointed him. (Heb. 3:1–2)

Jesus asked, and Peter answered correctly.

Whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered ... *\*Thou art the Christ*, the Son of the living God ... Jesus answered ... Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That, thou art Peter, and *\*upon this rock* I will build *my church*; and the *gates of hell*, shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the *\*keys of the kingdom of heaven*: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven:

and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his disciples that they should *tell no man that he was \*Jesus the Christ*. From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and *\*suffer* many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be *\*killed*, and be *\*raised* again the third day. (Matt. 16:15–21)

The *Rock* of the Church is clearly Jesus, why would a sinful man who could not possibly die for our sins be the Rock of the Church?

Peter preached boldly about the peace we have in Christ.

*Preaching peace by Jesus Christ ... whom they \*slew and hanged on a tree: Him God \*raised up the third day and shewed him openly ... even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he \*rose from the dead. And he commanded us ... to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead. To him give all the prophets witness ... through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins. (Acts 10:36, 39–43)*

Paul preached boldly the Gospel he received from Jesus.

Brethren, I declare unto you the *\*gospel—Christ \*died* for our sins according to the scriptures, that he was *\*buried*, and that he *\*rose* again the third day according to the scriptures: and that he was seen. (1 Cor. 15:1–5)

Jesus taught boldly about himself, the Christ, in all the scriptures.

O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not *Christ* to have *\*suffered* these things, and to enter, into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, *he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself*. (Luke 24:25–27)

Jesus used the Scripture because God had set it up from the foundations of the earth.

*Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Rom. 10:17)*

Being *born again*, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, *by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever*. For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away: But *the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the \*gospel is preached unto you.* (1 Pet. 1:23–25)

One day we will be living together with Jesus.

For God hath *not* appointed us to *wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, who \*died* for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him. (1 Thess. 5:9–10)

Believers living with Jesus

*Are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.* (1 Pet. 1:5)

I beheld, and, lo, a *great multitude* ... stood before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed *with white robes* ... And *cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God* which sitteth upon the throne *and unto the Lamb.* (Rev. 7:9–10)

Isaiah’s description of the Messiah, and what the Messiah has accomplished.

Who hath *believed* our report? ... He (*Jesus*) hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, *there is* no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were *our* faces from him; He was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely, he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But *he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities:*



the *chastisement* of our peace was upon him; and *with his stripes we are healed*. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned everyone to his own way; and *The LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all*. He was *oppressed, and he was afflicted*, yet he opened not his mouth: He is brought as *a Lamb to the slaughter*, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? For he was *cut off* out of the land of the living: *For the transgression* of my people was he *stricken*. And he made his *\*grave* with the wicked, and with the rich in his *\*death*; because he had done no violence, neither *was any* deceit in his mouth. *Yet it pleased the LORD* to bruise him, he hath put *him* to grief, when thou shalt make his soul *an offering for sin*, he shall see *his* seed, he shall prolong *his* days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul and shall be satisfied: *by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities*. Therefore, will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because *he hath poured out his soul unto \*death*: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors. (Isa. 53:1–12)

### 3. (Catholicism)

#### **Sacraments—Efficacious Signs—Visible**

The *\*Church* in this world is the *\*sacrament of salvation*, the sign, and the instrument of *the communion of God and men* (CCC-780). (*emphasis added*)

“*The Riches of Christ are communicated* to all the members *through the \*sacraments*.” {478 St. Thomas Aquinas, *Symb.*, 10} (CCC-947). (*emphasis added*)

*The saving work ... is revealed and active in the \*Church's sacraments ...* The seven sacraments are the signs and instruments by which the Holy Spirit *spreads the grace of Christ* (CCC-774). (*emphasis added*)

The Church *affirms* that for believers *the \*sacraments of the New Covenant are necessary for salvation* (CCC-1129). (*emphasis added*)

“Gateways to God: Celebrating the Sacraments”<sup>43</sup>

“Sacraments work as gateways that lead us to encounters with God ... *Jesus* described Himself as *the gate* to salvation and eternal life. And *the Church* is *the gateway* to the kingdom of God and the sacraments, the seven gateways to life-giving grace. (*emphasis added*)

“Approach the seven sacraments of the Church as gateways to divine life ... receive them with expectant faith ... let them strengthen ... for daily Christian living.” —*Priest Robert J. Hater PhD., Catholic Answers*

The *\*Sacraments* are efficacious *signs of grace*, instituted by Christ and entrusted to the *Church*, by which *divine life is dispensed to us* (CCC-1131). (*emphases added*)

### 3. (Biblical)

#### **Faith--Blessed are those who have not seen and yet have Believed**

Paul did not believe in Sacraments.

*We walk by faith, not by sight. (2 Cor. 5:7)*

Apostle John wrote that Moses gave us the law, but we have received from Jesus, grace, and truth.

*The Word was made flesh and dwelt among us ... full of grace and truth ... and of his fullness have all we received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. (John 1:14, 16–17)*

Many have heard God’s word, however, only those who mix the word with faith will enter God’s rest.

And Moses verily *was faithful* in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after; But Christ as a son over his own house; *whose house are we*, if we hold fast the *confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end* ... And to whom sware he that they should not enter, into his rest, *but to them that believed not?* So, we see that they could not enter in because of *unbelief.*” Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering, into his rest, any of you should seem to *come short of it.* For unto us was the \*gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, *not being mixed with faith* in them that heard it. For we which have *believed do enter, into rest.* (Heb. 3:5–6, 18–19; 4:1–3)

The Sacraments and *Church* attendance can be *faithfully* accomplished daily, but according to Catholic teaching, they still do not offer assurance or a guarantee of everlasting life.

True Salvation, like the prodigal son admits, is undeserved. However, with God’s Word and a childlike faith, the sinner may come boldly to God’s throne of grace and receive God’s gift of *eternal life.*

*He (the LORD) giveth grace unto the lowly.* (Prov. 3:34)

God wants no one to perish. Plainly and specifically, he states that the sinner must seek God to find him. From the worst sinner—the apostle Paul, to who we think is the least sinner and to us, each of us needs Jesus.

Verily I say unto you, except, ye be converted, and become as *little children*, ye shall not enter-into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever, therefore, shall humble himself as this *little child*, the same is greatest *in the kingdom of heaven.* (Matt. 18:3–4)

No religious laws or rules, just Jesus’s command to love, forgive, and hate evil/falsehood. These acts are defined as Godliness.

And you ... who were dead in trespasses and sins ... and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. But *God* ... rich in mercy ... hath *quicken*ed us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) and hath *rais*ed us up together, and *made us sit together* in heavenly places *in Christ Jesus* ... *For by grace are ye saved* through faith ... not of yourselves: *it is the gift of God*: not of works, lest any man should boast. (Eph. 2:1, 3–9)

For the Scripture saith, *whosoever, believeth* on him *shall not be ashamed*. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For, *whosoever shall call* upon the name of the Lord *shall be saved*. (Rom. 10:11–13)

#### 4. (Catholicism)

##### **Merit—Graces for Sanctification and Eternal Life**

The initiative belongs to God ... *no one can merit the initial grace of forgiveness* and justification, at the beginning of conversion. Moved by the Holy Spirit and by charity, *we can \*merit* for ourselves and for others the *graces needed for our sanctification, for the increase of grace and charity, and for the attainment of eternal life* (CCC-2010). (*emphasis added*)

#### 4. (Biblical)

##### **Meriting Righteousness and the Uselessness of Religious Acts**

But we are all as an *unclean thing*, and all our righteousnesses are as *filthy rags*. (Isa. 64:6)

Paul warns to beware and keep your focus on Christ.

*Beware of dogs, beware, of evil workers, beware of the concision. For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh* ... not having *mine own righteousness*, which is of the law, but that which is *through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith*. (Phil. 3:2–3, 9)

Hell-bound sinners of Satan may, through faith in Jesus Christ, be overcomers.

*He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose, the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil ... For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.* (1 John 3:8; 5:4)

*Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name, whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.* (Jer. 23:5–6)

*Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: That according as it is written, he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.* (1 Cor. 1:30–31)

## 5. (Catholicism)

### **Baptism—Bath of Rebirth (CCC-1216).**

*Justification ... merited for us by the Passion of Christ ... granted us through \*Baptism ... its goal the glory of God and of Christ, and the gift of eternal life* (CCC-2020). *(emphasis added)*

*\*Baptism is birth into the new life in Christ ... it is necessary for salvation, as is the \*Church herself, which we enter by Baptism* (CCC-1277). *(emphasis added)*

Our Lord *tied forgiveness of sins to faith and Baptism ... {519 Mk. 16:15–16} Baptism is the first and chief sacrament of forgiveness of sins because it unites us with Christ, who died for our sins and rose for our justification* (CCC-977). *(emphasis added)*

The Lord Himself affirms that *Baptism is necessary for salvation ... the Church does not know of any means other than Baptism that assures entry into eternal beatitude* (CCC-1257). (*emphasis added*)

It is by *faith* in the Gospel *and Baptism* {17 Cf. Acts 2:38} that one renounces evil and *gains salvation* that is *the forgiveness of all sins and the gift of new life* (CCC-1427). (*emphasis added*)

“No Guarantees: Why Parents Must Pray like St. Monica”<sup>44</sup>

“In previous columns, I have written about *the human need for ritual*, (*emphasis added*) and the responsibility of parents to provide it to help feed the gift of faith in their children. While nothing can relieve us from that responsibility, we must recognize that even parents who asked the Church for the gift for their child cannot, in the end, force that child to embrace that gift. If they could, it wouldn’t be a gift, after all.” —*Scott P. Richert, The Countermarch/Our Sunday Visitor*

“*Baptism indeed is the seal of eternal life*” (CCC-1274). (*emphasis added*)

*Children* also have *need* of the *new birth in Baptism to be freed* from the power of darkness and brought into the realm of the freedom of the children of God ... *the grace of salvation* is particularly manifest in *infant Baptism*. The Church and the parents would *deny* a child the priceless grace of becoming a child of God were they not to confer *Baptism* shortly after birth (CCC-1250).

“Why Is Acts 8:37 Omitted from Many Bible Translations?”<sup>45</sup>

“Question: Why isn’t Acts 8:37, “If thou, believes with all thine heart, thou mayest,” included in many Catholic Bible translations? My non-Catholic friend says the Church omitted this verse in an, effort to cover up the truth that baptism is not necessary for salvation.

“Answer: Acts 8:37 is not included in many Bible translations because it is not found in the oldest and best translations of Acts. There is no attempt to cover it up, as you can find it (with an explanation) in the footnotes of

most Bibles. In fact, the Catholic Douay-Rheims New Testament includes Acts 8:37.

“The *Haydock Bible Commentary* explains the meaning of ‘If thou, believes’ in this way:

But *infants* are baptized in the faith of the Church. Their sponsors, who receive them from the font, answer for them. And as *the defilement was not personal, but that of others*, so are *they purified by the faith of others.*”  
(*emphasis added*) —Peggy Frye, *Catholic Answers Q&A*

*Children* who have *died without Baptism*, the liturgy of the Church invites us to trust in God’s mercy and *pray for their salvation* (CCC-1283). (*emphasis added*)

“*Since Christ died for all*, and since all men are in fact called to one and the same destiny, which is divine, we must hold that the Holy Spirit offers to all the possibility of being partakers, in a way known to God, of *the Paschal Mystery*. Every man who is ignorant of the Gospel of Christ and of His Church but seeks the truth and does the will of God in accordance with his understanding of it, *can be saved. It may be supposed that such persons would have desired baptism explicitly if they had known its necessity* (CCC-1260). (*emphasis added*)

“If Non-Catholics Can Be Saved, Why Evangelize? It’s Complicated”<sup>46</sup>

“St. Thomas Aquinas further stipulated that ‘baptism of desire’ need not be explicit; one ‘receives the forgiveness of sins before Baptism in so far as he has Baptism of desire, explicitly or implicitly’ (ST III, 69, 4).

“In other words, it is possible to receive salvation in Christ not only without baptism itself, but even without an explicit desire for baptism per se, but having only a broader or more general desire that in some way implies or includes desire for baptism, or for that to which baptism gives access.”  
—Steven D. Greydanus, *National Catholic Register*

“Can Non-Christians Be Saved?”<sup>47</sup>

“The Catholic Church has consistently affirmed that *Jesus alone* is Savior of mankind. (*emphasis added*)

“A more complex question is: *How* are we saved by Jesus Christ?

“Imagine the way to heaven to be like a railroad train: You could get to the destination riding in a boxcar or clinging to the sides of the train, or by riding in the first class, coach in the front. Some Christians hold that only those in first class are saved. They are people who explicitly believe in Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior.

“The word of God gives us hope that those who respond to the grace of Christ may be saved, even if they do not know him explicitly. Matthew, chapter 25 ... In this passage, God judges ‘the nations’ strictly by the criterion of charity. Faith in Christ is not mentioned in Matthew 25, *possibly because ... (it was) assumed ... On the other hand, if we presume ... we must conclude* that the ultimate requirement for salvation is not faith, but charity. This would illumine the teaching of ... James that faith without works of love is dead and useless.” (*emphasis added*) —*Alan Schreck, Catholic & Christian*

## 5. (Biblical)

### **Baptism: A Testimony of Rebirth**

Apostle Peter is clear that water baptism comes after salvation and the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Baptism by immersion is a testimony of the believer, of their new spiritual birth in Christ.

Peter, who shall tell thee, *words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved. And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning.* Then remembered I *the word of the Lord*, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but *ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.* Forasmuch then as God gave them the *like gift* as he did unto us, *who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ*; what was I, that I could withstand God? When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God saying, Then, hath God also to the Gentiles *granted repentance unto life.* (Acts 11:13–18)



Faith is *not* a gift. As mentioned earlier in the above article “No Guarantees,” the Catholic Church may be purposefully trying to confuse the so-called “gift of faith” with the gift of free will. Faith is nurtured by God through his creation and his Word, until it produces fruit unto everlasting life, by a free-will choice. I did a count with the KJV in regard to the last Catholic article; the word *faith* appears thirteen times in the Gospel of Matthew, whereas *faithless* appears only one time.

*The invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.* (Rom. 1:20)

For when the Gentiles ... which shew the work of the law in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another. (Rom. 2:14–15)

God gave Adam and Eve a choice; they chose to eat the fruit from the tree which would give them, like God, the knowledge of good and evil. This knowledge was then passed on to their children and to all of mankind, which includes us.

And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us (The Trinity), to know good and evil ... Therefore, the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden ... he drove out the man; and he placed ... Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Gen. 3:22–24)

Paul: I have *planted*, Apollos *watered*; but God *gave the increase*. (1 Cor. 3:6)

I charge *thee* therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; *Preach the word ... (Westgerdes: skip the rituals!) do the work* of an evangelist.” (2 Tim. 4:1–2, 5)

Man is also required to work for his faith, he must receive and search the scriptures (Acts 17:11). They must also search for God to find him (see Jer. 29:13 and Matt. 7:7). Apostle Paul is clear; baptism is not a requirement for salvation.

For Christ sent me *not to baptize*, but to *preach the \*gospel: Not with wisdom of words*, lest the *cross* of Christ should be made of none, effect. (1 Cor. 1:17)

For though ye have ten thousand instructors *in Christ*, yet, *have ye not many fathers: For in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.* (1 Cor. 4:15)

*Call no man your father upon earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.* (Matt. 23:9)

*Even though Paul may be their father through the Gospel, Jesus's instruction is clear: No man or spiritual leader should be called Father.*

Do not err, my beloved brethren. *every good gift, and every perfect gift, is from above*, and cometh down from the *Father* of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. Of *his own will begat he us with the word of truth*, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his creatures ... *receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.* (James 1:16–18, 21)

Nicodemus (a Pharisee which came to Jesus by night and asked) ... How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother's womb and be born? Jesus ... Verily, verily, I say unto thee, *Except, a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter, into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.* Marvel not that I said unto thee, *ye must be born again.* The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is *born of the Spirit.* (John 3:1,4–8)

The above phrase “born of water” is often referred to as water baptism. Another view is that this is referring to a child’s physical birth in which the water sack is burst at birth. This seems to be the case since in the next sentence Jesus mentions “that which is born of flesh is flesh.”

## 6. (Catholicism)

### **Penance: Reconciliation with God and the Church**

The communion of the Holy Spirit in the Church restores to the baptized the divine likeness lost through sin (CCC-734).

“If the *Church has the power* to forgive sins, then *\*Baptism* cannot be her only means of using, *the \*keys of the Kingdom of heaven* received from Jesus Christ” (CCC-979). (*emphasis added*)

It is through the *\*sacrament of Penance* that the baptized can be reconciled with God and with the *Church: ... This sacrament of Penance is necessary for salvation* for those who have fallen after baptism, just as *Baptism is necessary for salvation for those who have not yet, been reborn*” (CCC-980). (*emphasis added*)

*Converting to Christ through \*penance and \*faith*, the sinner passes from death to life (CCC-1470). (*emphasis added*)

“Obsolete sacrament?”<sup>48</sup>

“Been to confession lately?... According to the Center for Applied Research in the Apostolate at Georgetown University, a full 75 percent of Catholics in the United States say they go to confession less than once a year or never.” Just 2 percent say they go “once a month or more.” —*Editorial, Our Sunday Visitor, 2011*

“Survey: Only 24% of Catholic Women Attend Mass Weekly”<sup>49</sup>

“At least 70% of Catholic women objectively disobey the Church’s teaching on Confession.” —*Michael W. Chapman, CNSNews, 2018*

“Individual, integral confession and absolution remain the only *ordinary way* for the faithful to reconcile themselves with *God* and the *Church*, unless physical or moral impossibility excuses from this kind of confession” (CCC-1484). (*emphasis added*)

“*Only priests* who have received the faculty of absolving from the authority of the Church can forgive sins in the name of Christ” (CCC-1495). (*emphasis added*)

“My favorite stories are those of conversions. It is unbelievable the number of people I meet, who, after seeing the statue and hearing the message of Fatima, are moved to go to confession after many years. There are always long lines in our parish visitations.” —*Patrick Sabat, Program Director, Fatima Tour for Peace*

## 6. (Biblical)

### **Sin and Reconciliation through Faith in Christ**

*Westgerdes:* As a child growing up in the Catholic Church we were required, whether by our parents or the Church or both to go to confession once a month. This was not a joyous time but, boring. You had to think of something you did wrong, confess it, and then the Priest, who sounded just as bored as we were, said, “Say five Our Fathers and five Hail Mary’s” and then we would go back and sit or kneel and pray and reflect for a time. Ugh! However, I do remember there were two times, maybe three, where the Holy Spirit was really convicting me of a certain sin, and when I confessed it during one of my monthly trips to Confession, the joy of the Lord flooded my soul and heart with assured forgiveness. I was just as joyous as I was when I had trusted in Christ at age seven. This was not a result of the Sacrament of Penance but of my faith that God could and would forgive me of my sin.

Only God can forgive sin is attested to by the Jewish leaders and in an indirect way by the Catholic Priesthood since they claim to be doing so in Christ place. Without this self-proclaimed power they would have no power to do so. Which they do not. Jesus’s pronouncements of forgiveness were valid because he, is God, one with the Father.

When Jesus saw their *faith*, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, *thy sins be, forgiven thee*. But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, Why, doth this *man* thus, speak blasphemies? *Who can forgive sins but God only?* (Mark 2:5–7)

And Jesus answered and said unto them, *take heed* that no man, *deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.* (Matt. 24:4–5)

The Roman Catholic Church is not ashamed of what they teach or of who they declare themselves to be. Even the Scriptures, God’s own words, do not deter them.

“*Lumen Gentium*—Chapter III—The Church is Hierarchical”<sup>50</sup>

“20. ... with priests and deacons as helpers, [11] the bishops received the charge of the community, presiding in God’s stead over the flock, [12] ... Moreover, just as the office which the Lord confided to Peter alone ... is a permanent one, so also endures the office, which the apostles received, of shepherding the Church and ... [14] The sacred synod consequently teaches that the bishops have by divine institution taken the place of the apostles as pastors of the Church, [15] in such wise that *whoever listens to them is listening to Christ and whoever despises them despises Christ and him who sent Christ* (cf. Lk. 10:16).[16]” (*emphasis added*) —*Our Lady’s Warriors*

They who hear God’s word and walk in it, shall be blessed.

*Blessed* are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the LORD ... Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed thereto according *thy word*. (Ps. 119:1, 9)

Therefore, *being justified by faith*, we have peace with *God* through our *Lord Jesus Christ*: By whom also *we have access by faith into this grace* wherein we stand and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. (Rom. 3:9, 17, 19–20, 5:1–2)

Catholics believe they have access to God’s grace through the sacraments. Paul, as we just read, states that believers have access to God’s grace by faith.

For if ye *forgive men* their trespasses, *your heavenly Father will also forgive you.* (Matt. 6:14)

*Be ye therefore merciful,* as your Father also is merciful. (Luke 6:36)

It is not Mary or the saints, but it is God only who knows the hearts of men.

Then hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place, and *forgive,* and do, and give to every man according to his ways, whose heart thou knowest; (*for thou, even thou only, knowest the hearts of all the children of men;*). (1 Ki. 8:39)

God does not forsake anyone; Jesus died for the sins of the world, those who would believe and those who would not.

Thou art *a God ready to pardon,* gracious and *merciful slow to anger,* and *of great kindness.* (Neh. 9:17)

*Seek ye the LORD* while he may be found, *call ye upon him* while he is near: Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him *return* unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and *to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.* (Isa. 55:6, 7)

## 7. (Catholicism)

### **Confirmation: Gift of the Holy Spirit**

One should receive the sacrament of *\*Penance* in order to be cleansed for the gift of the Holy Spirit (CCC-1310). (*emphasis added*)

“The *faithful* are obliged to receive this Sacrament at the appropriate time” for without *\*Confirmation* and *\*Eucharist* ... Christian initiation remains incomplete (CCC-1306). (*emphasis added*)

The *sacrament of Confirmation* is the *full outpouring of The Holy Spirit* as once granted to the apostles on the day of Pentecost (CCC-1302). (*emphasis added*)

*Confirmation* brings an increase and deepening of baptismal grace (CCC-1303). (*emphasis added*)

\**Confirmation*, like \**Baptism*, imprints a spiritual mark or indelible character on the Christian's soul; for this reason, one can receive this sacrament only once in one's life (CCC-1317). (*emphasis added*)

## 7. (Biblical)

### **Holy Spirit Baptism and Sealing—At the Moment of Saving Faith**

And I say unto you, *Ask*, and it shall be given you; *seek*, and ye shall find; *knock*, and *it shall be opened* unto you. For everyone that *asketh receiveth*; and he that *seeketh findeth*; and to him that *knocketh it shall be opened*. If a son shall ask of bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? Or ... for a fish give him a serpent? Or ... an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father *give the Holy Spirit* to them that *ask him*? (Luke 11:9–13)

Through the power of the Holy Spirit we become witnesses to spread the message of the Cross, the gospel of Jesus death, burial, and resurrection.

But *ye shall receive power*, after that the *Holy Ghost* is come upon you: and *ye shall be witnesses* unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. (Acts 1:8)

And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all *filled with the Holy Ghost*, and began to speak with other *tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance*. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that *every man heard them speak in his own language*. (Acts 2:1–6)

A false doctrine and gospel concerning the Gentiles (non-Jews) is creeping into the Church and must be dealt with now.

There rose-up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which *believed*, saying, That, it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses. And the apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter. And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the *word of the \*gospel*, and *believe*. And God, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the *Holy Ghost*, even as *he did* unto us; And put no difference between us and them, *purifying their hearts by faith*. Now therefore, why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? But we *believe* that through the *grace* of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be *saved*, even as they. (Acts 15:5–11)

The Gospel had been secured and defended; nothing was added to it. Jesus does the saving, and believers do the believing. The believing trust, that Jesus the Savior, does the saving.

We glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; and patience, experience; and experience, hope: And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the *Holy Ghost* which is given unto us ... For the *kingdom of God* is not meat and drink (Westgerdes: could this apply to the Eucharist/Mass just as easily as our daily food?); but *righteousness*, and *peace*, and *joy* in the *Holy Ghost* ... Now the God of hope fill you with *all joy and peace in believing*, that ye may *abound in hope*, through the power of the *Holy Ghost*. (Rom. 5:3–5; 14:17; 15:13)

The above passage reminded me of one of my favorite hymns—Blessed Assurance!

“Blessed assurance, Jesus is mine,



O what a foretaste of glory divine!  
Heir of salvation, purchase of God,  
Born of His Spirit, washed in His blood

“This is my story, this is my song,  
Praising my Savior all-the-day long. (repeat)

“Perfect submission, all is at rest,  
I in my Savior am happy and blest,  
Watching and waiting, looking above,  
Filled with His goodness, lost in His love

“This is my story, this is my song,  
Praising my Savior all-the-day long. (repeat)” —**Fanny Crosby, 1873**

Something that we can agree on with Catholics is that *what* we believe should be verifiable in writing. The great difference with Catholics is that they hold man’s words (traditions) as equal with God’s written words. Christians use only the Bible God’s, written Word.

As Catholics have stated, if you have any questions about Catholicism, you can resolve all doubts or controversy by checking the Catechism. Christians have God’s Word and the Holy Spirit.

For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; *that we might know* the things that are *freely given* to us of God. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man’s wisdom teacheth, but which the *Holy Ghost* teacheth, comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (1 Cor. 2:11–13; see also 2 Tim. 1:13–14; Titus 3:5)

And it is the *Spirit* that beareth witness, because, the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the *Holy Ghost*: and these three are one. (1 John 5:6, 7)

**8. (Catholicism)**

**Initiation: Three Sacraments Make Us “Holy and Without Blemish”**

Christian *Initiation* is accomplished by *three sacraments* ... \**Baptism* ... the beginning of *new life*; \**Confirmation* ... it’s *strengthening* ... the \**Eucharist* which *nourishes* the disciple with Christ’s Body and Blood for his *transformation* in Christ (CCC-1275). (*emphasis added*)

*Conversion* to Christ, the new birth of *Baptism*, the gift of the *Holy Spirit* and the Body and Blood of *Christ* received as *food* have made us “*holy and without blemish*” (CCC-1426). (*emphasis added*)

The *holy Eucharist* completes Christian initiation. Those who have been raised to the dignity of the royal priesthood by *Baptism* and configured more deeply to Christ in *Confirmation participate* with the whole community in the *Lord’s own sacrifice* by means of the *Eucharist* (CCC-1322). (*emphasis added*)



**8. (Biblical)**

**Welcome to the family through repentance, faith in Christ, and the baptism of the Holy Spirit**

*Ye were not redeemed with corruptible things ... but with the precious blood of Christ ... Unto you therefore which believe he is precious.* (1 Pet. 1:18–19; 2:7)

Now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the *blood* of Christ ... by the *cross* ... For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. (Eph. 2:13, 16, 18)

Paul instructs the saints in Corinth that the Church/Believers no longer know Christ after the flesh thus nullifying the teaching and supposed Mystery of the Eucharist, this is supported by what Jesus taught in John 6:62–63.

*Christ ... \*died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which \*died for them, and \*rose again. Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know, we him no more. Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature ... We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain. (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succored thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.) (2 Cor. 5:14–17; 6:1–2)*

Paul points out that believers in Jesus Christ, who are reading or hearing this epistle, are fellow citizens with the saints in heaven.

*Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being, the chief corner stone. (Eph. 2:19–20)*

Paul called Jesus Christ the chief corner stone, Peter referred to Jesus as the Christ, and Jesus said, “upon this Rock I will build my church.” Jesus is the Christ, the Savior of the world, the Rock and Chief Corner Stone. The apostles and prophets inspired by the Holy Spirit gave us God’s word, they believed and served Jesus and are the foundation built upon Jesus. Those who believed the message of the apostles and prophets are built upon the apostles and prophets. Simple and obviously, Jesus was referring to Peter’s statement of faith that Jesus is the Christ means Jesus is the Rock.

*But whom, say ye that I am? ... Peter answered ... Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God ... and upon this ROCK I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the \*keys of the kingdom of heaven ... From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be \*killed, and be \*raised again the third day. (Matt. 16:15–16, 18–21)*

## JESUS IS THE ROCK OF THE CHURCH

Jesus is the Rock of the church because the church is made up of individual believers no matter the “Church” entity or denomination they may be in. The current Pontiff may be the visible earthly Rock of the Roman Catholic Church but not of the Catholic Orthodox Church nor is he the Rock of any other entity that considers themselves “Christian” but not Catholic. Jesus is the Christ, the Savior, the Rock of the Christian Church, of those who by faith have trusted in him as their way, truth, and life.

Written over Him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, *THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS*. And *one of the malefactors* which were hanged *railed on him*, saying, If, thou be the Christ, save thyself and us. *But the other answering, rebuked, him*, saying, (1) *Dost not thou fear God*, seeing thou art in the same *condemnation?* And *we indeed justly*; (2) *for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss*. And he said unto *Jesus*, (3) *Remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom*. And Jesus said unto him, *Verily, I say unto thee*, (4) *To day shalt thou be with me in paradise*. (Luke 23:38–43; numbering added)

The *foolish malefactor* was thinking only of maintaining his *earthly life*. However, the *wise malefactor* recognized his impending death and *humbled himself*.

*He feared God*.

*He acknowledged his guilt*, that his deeds were sinful and that his punishment of death was just and deserved.

*He recognized that Jesus was guiltless*, sinless and that His suffering and death were undeserved.

*He believed* that Jesus would live again and have His own kingdom.

*He had faith* that Jesus was the Christ who could forgive him and give him a new life.

*Jesus recognized the wise malefactor’s faith* and promised him *eternal life* that very day.

Perhaps, unknowingly, the *wise malefactor's* comments point to *Jesus* as the *Rock* upon which the *Church* would be built, because after all:

“*Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and today, and forever*” (Heb. 13:8).

Here, again, are the wise malefactor’s comments, followed by one or more parallel Old Testament Scriptures.

(1) “Dost not thou fear God?”

For, who *is* God, save the LORD? And who *is* a *ROCK*, save our God. (Psalm 22:23)

(2) “For we receive the due reward for our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.”

To shew that the LORD is upright: he is my *ROCK*, and there is no unrighteousness in him. (Ps. 92:15)

*He is* the *ROCK*, his work *is* perfect: for all his ways are judgment: A God of truth and without iniquity, just and right *is* he. (Deut. 32:4)

(3) “Jesus, remember me when thou comest into thy Kingdom.”

Deliver me in thy righteousness and cause me to escape, incline thine ear unto me, and save me. Be thou my strong habitation, whereunto I may continually resort: Thou hast given commandment to save me; for thou *art* my *ROCK* and my fortress. (Ps. 71:2–3)

Unto thee will I cry, O LORD my *ROCK*; be not silent to me: lest, if thou be silent to me, I become like them that go down into the pit. (Ps. 28:1)

(4) Jesus’s response: “To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.”

These scriptures reveal the joy the wise malefactor must have experienced that day.

The LORD liveth; and blessed be my *ROCK*; and exalted be the God of the *ROCK* of my salvation. (2 Sam. 22:47)

The LORD is my *ROCK*, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust. (Ps. 18:2)

O Come, let us sing unto the LORD: let us make a joyful noise to the *ROCK* of our salvation. Let us come before his presence with thanksgiving and make a joyful noise unto him with psalms. For the LORD is a great God, and a great King above all gods ... O Come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the LORD our maker. For he is our God; and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand. (Ps. 95:1-3, 6-7)

Apostle Paul warned about false teachers and false teachings which not known to him, would relate to the Mass, Eucharist, Sanctuaries, the Monstrance, and so forth.

*BEWARE*: lest any man spoil you through *philosophy* and *vain deceit*, after the *traditions* of men, and *not after Christ*. (Col. 2:8)

In CCC-1426, Catholicism clearly avoids mentioning Jesus's blood shed on the Cross.

Without *shedding of BLOOD*; is no remission ... For Christ is *not entered* into the *holy places made with hands*, which are the figures of the true: but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: *Nor yet that he should OFFER himself OFTEN ... For then must he OFTEN have suffered since the foundation of the world but now ONCE in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men ONCE to die*, but after this the judgment: So Christ was *ONCE offered* to bear the sins of many; and unto



them that look for him, shall he appear the *second time* without sin unto *salvation*. (Heb. 9:22, 24–28)



Jesus: I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because *thou hast hid* these things from the wise and prudent, *and hast revealed* them unto babes. (Matt. 11:25)

Jesus was covered in and paid for our sin debt, through faith in Jesus we are covered in the payment receipt of his righteousness. Apostle Paul preached concerning Jesus's sacrifice and gift as being an opportunity for reconciliation with God.



Now ... be ye reconciled to God. For *he hath made him to be sin for us*, who knew no sin; *That we might be made the righteousness of God in him*. (2 Cor. 5:20, 21)

### **A TRUE, SCRIPTURAL, SINNER'S PRAYER**

*Have mercy on me*, O God, according to thy loving kindness ... *cleanse me* from my sin

... For *I acknowledge my transgressions ... wash me and I shall be whiter than snow.* (Ps. 51: 1-3, 7)

What was God's answer to the sinner's prayer of faith in his forgiveness? An eternal, YES!

*Peace, from him which is ... which was ... which is to come ... unto him that loved us and washed us from our sins in his own BLOOD.* (Rev. 1:4-5)

*They sung ... for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy BLOOD.* (Rev. 5:9)

**PAUL'S FOCUS**

*But God forbid that I should glory save in the CROSS of our Lord Jesus Christ.* (Gal. 6:14)

**PAUL'S STATEMENT OF FAITH**

I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but *Christ liveth in me:* and the life which I now live in the flesh *I live by the faith of the Son of God,* who loved me, and gave himself for me. (Gal. 2:20)



**JESUS PROCLAIMS THE BLESSEDNESS OF FAITH**

Jesus saith ... Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: *Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.* (John 20:29-31)

The Apostles write on our position in Christ

According as *he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world,* that we should *be holy and without blame before him in love.* (Eph. 1:4)



Now *ye are clean through the word* which I have spoken unto you. *Abide in me, and I in you.* As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it, *abide in the vine*; no more can ye, except ye *abide in me*. (John 15:3–4)

Apostle Paul reveals, a great Mystery concerning Christ and his Church.

Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave himself for it; That he, might *sanctify and cleanse it* with the *washing of water by the word*, that he, might *present* it to himself a *glorious Church*, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be *holy and without blemish*. So, ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cheriseth it, even as the Lord the *Church ... This is a great Mystery ... concerning Christ and the Church*. (Eph. 5:25–29, 32)

Jesus’s Joy, the worship, fellowship, and love of the redeemed.

Let us *run with patience the race* that is set before us, *looking, unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith*; who for the *joy* that was set before him *endured the cross, despising the shame*, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.” (Heb. 12:1–2)

If thou shalt—thou shalt be saved

*The word* is nigh thee, even in thy *mouth, and in thy heart*: That is, the *word of faith*, which we *preach*; That if thou shalt *confess* with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, *and shalt believe* in thine heart that *God hath \*raised* him from the *\*dead, thou shalt be saved*. (Rom. 10:8–9)

In the Catholic Catechism, the term *necessary* appears several times. Here is an instance when it appears in Scripture.

For it seemed good to the *Holy Ghost*, and to *us*, to lay upon you *no greater burden* than these *necessary things*, ... *abstain from meats* offered to idols ... *from blood* ... *from things strangled*, and *from fornication*: *From which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well.* (Acts 15:28–29)

Biblical Christianity is not about religion; it is about respect and godliness—respect for the Gospel of Christ, and Godliness a life of service to God and neighbor.

9. (Catholicism)

**Eucharist: Christ Offered in an Unbloody Manner**

*The Seven Sacraments*—a children’s book. <sup>51</sup>

“JESUS gave us the Holy Eucharist at the Last Supper ... ‘Do this as a remembrance of Me.’ At that moment, the Apostles became priests ... and were given the power” to consecrate the bread and wine “so that people of all times may be present at the Sacrifice of Jesus ... called the Mass. The Mass is the Sacrifice of the Cross.”

“*Holy Mass makes present for us the Passion, Death and Resurrection of Jesus* ... but now He is in glory and cannot suffer.” (*emphasis added*)

“In the Mass we offer Jesus to the heavenly Father as the greatest Gift we have.”



At the climax, the children are pictured gazing upon a hovering Eucharist above a golden chalice.

“Jesus ... invites them to come and pray to Him in the tabernacle, where He is present day and night, praying to His Heavenly Father for all of us ... the best friend of children.” —*Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D.*

The *Eucharist* is “the source and summit of the Christian life. The other sacraments ... are bound up with the Eucharist and oriented toward it. For *in the blessed Eucharist is contained the whole spiritual good of the Church*, namely Christ himself, our Pasch” (CCC-1324). (*emphasis added*)



Israelites and Catholics use a light to signify God’s presence in the Tabernacle.

“The Prominence and Placement of Tabernacles Explained”<sup>52</sup>

“In her book *Fulfilled: Uncovering the Biblical Foundations of Catholicism*, Sonja Corbitt ... writes:

“*The strictly prescribed Tabernacle setup informed the Israelites that they could only draw near God in the way he offered*’ (*Fulfilled*, 240). (*emphasis added*)

“The similarities are not a coincidence: ‘*Light was a metaphor ... for the saving presence of God.*’ (*Fulfilled*, 152–153). This light ... is fulfilled ... in the Magisterium of the Church, which continues to ... shed light today, and ... offers us *new ways* to draw near God.” (*emphasis added*) —*Matt Dunn, Ascension*

*The Holy Eucharist*—a children’s book.<sup>53</sup>

“Jesus Is with Us in the Tabernacle.” This is signified by a lit candle. Concerning his Eucharistic presence in the tabernacle, Jesus is quoted as saying, “Know that I am with you always; yes, to the end of time” (Matt. 28:20).



On the next page, a priest is elevating a Monstrance, a child is looking on in awe and admiration at Christ’s Eucharistic presence.

The caption reads:



**“Jesus Is ‘God with Us’”** (The children are told,) “The Eucharist was ... and is still the center of all worship of God today and to the end of time.” —*Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D.*

The sacrifice of Christ and the sacrifice of the Eucharist are *one single sacrifice*: “The *victim* is one and the same... only the *manner* of offering is different. ... *in the Mass ... Christ ... is offered in an unbloody, manner*” (CCC-1367). *(emphasis added)*

*My Picture Missal*— a children’s book. <sup>54</sup>

Following the picture of the “*ELEVATION OF THE HOST,*” the consecration, the children are instructed to, “Adore the Sacred Host and say: ‘*My Lord and my God!*’”



Next, the Priest is pictured elevating the chalice for the “*CONSECRATION OF THE WINE* (when) the Priest

changes the wine into the living blood of Jesus.”



Next, the children are encouraged to proclaim, “the Mystery of our faith” the “Memorial Acclamation.”

“We now acclaim Our Lord Jesus Christ who is with us on the altar. We remember his Passion, Death, and Resurrection and his Return on the Last Day.” —Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D.

“Why the Sign of Peace is Important”<sup>55</sup>

“In *Sacramentum Caritatis*, Pope Benedict XVI instructs, ‘By its nature the Eucharist is the sacrament of peace. At mass, this dimension of the Eucharistic mystery finds specific expression in the sign of peace.’”  
—Patrice Fagnant-MacArthur, *Spiritual Woman*

Because this bread and wine have been made *Eucharist* (“eucharisted,” according to an ancient expression), “we call this food *Eucharist*, and no one may take part in it unless he believes that what we teach is true, has received baptism for the forgiveness of sins and new birth, and lives in keeping with what Christ taught” {180 St. Justin, *Apol.* 1, 66, 1–2: PG 6 428} (CCC-1355). (*emphasis added*)



“Quotes About Eucharist”<sup>56</sup>

“The more ardent the love for the Eucharist in the hearts of the Christian people, the more clearly will they recognize the goal of all mission: to bring Christ to others. Not just a theory or a way of life inspired by Christ, but the gift of his very person—Without the Eucharist, the Church simply does not exist.” —**Pontiff Benedict XVI**

“70% of Catholics Do Not Believe in Jesus’s Real Presence in the Eucharist, New Study Finds”<sup>57</sup>

“The Pew Research study, conducted in Feb. 2019, found that only 31 percent of Catholics believe the Church’s teaching on transubstantiation.

“Only 28 percent of Catholics actually know the Church’s teaching on transubstantiation.

“22 percent *do know* the Church’s teaching on transubstantiation but reject the Church’s teaching on the Real Presence.

“Bishop Robert Barron ... ‘it’s hard to describe how angry I feel’ ... this ‘should be a wakeup call for all of us in the Church.

“If it’s only a symbol, why bother?... Big deal!” “This is a central teaching of Catholicism—that Jesus is really, truly, and substantially under the forms of bread and wine. It’s a basic tenet of Catholicism.” —*ChurchPOP*

A year-later update.

“Renewal Must Be Christ–Centered” <sup>58</sup>

“The alarm seems to have died down ... Buried in the Pew survey (of February 2019) was the finding that sixty–three percent of regular Sunday Mass participants polled affirm the Church’s teaching on the Eucharist.

“Belief in the Eucharist is diminishing among younger Catholics, with only twenty–six percent of the faithful under forty believing in the Real Presence.

“We have a crisis on our hands.

“The formula for advancing the kingdom requires—fidelity to Christ and the teachings of his Church, especially receiving the sacraments of the Eucharist and confession. The renewal of the Church will be Christ–centered, or it won’t happen.” —*Tom Nash, Catholic Answers*

When the Church celebrates the Eucharist, she commemorates Christ’s Passover, and it is made present: *the sacrifice Christ offered once* for all on the cross remains ever present. {183 Cf. *Heb. 7:25–27*} “As often as the sacrifice of the Cross by which ‘Christ

our Pasch has been sacrificed’ is celebrated on the altar, *the work of our redemption is carried out*” {184 LG 3; cf. 1 Cor. 5:7} (CCC-1364). (*emphasis added*)

“A Priest’s Most Important Job”<sup>59</sup>

“The priest’s first duty is to preach the Faith by word and example ... But his chief and most valuable role ... is to celebrate the sacrifice of the Eucharist.

“This role is so valuable that the Church strongly encourages priests to celebrate every day, even when the faithful cannot be present.

“The Savior through his priesthood shared by our ministers offers up his perfect and completed sacrifice in the Eucharist so as, to apply its fruits throughout time ‘until he comes in glory.’” —*Priest Hugh Barbour, Catholic Answers*

In the *Eucharist* Christ gives us the *very body*, which he gave up for us on the cross, the *very blood* which, He “poured out for many for the *forgiveness of sins*” {186 Mt 26:28} (CCC-1365). (*emphasis added*)



“The Real Presence of Jesus Christ in the Sacrament of the Eucharist: Basic Questions and Answers”<sup>60</sup>

“The whole Christ is truly present, body, blood, soul, and divinity, under the appearances of bread and wine—

the glorified Christ who rose from the dead after dying for our sins. This is what the Church means when she speaks of the ‘Real Presence’ of Christ in the Eucharist.

“How does this happen? The presence of the risen Christ in the Eucharist is *an inexhaustible mystery* that the Church can never fully explain in words.” (*emphasis added*) —*Msgr. William P. Fay, U.S. Conf. of Catholic Bishops*

The Eucharist is thus a Sacrifice because it *re-presents* (makes present) the Sacrifice of the cross because it is its *memorial* and because it *applies* its Fruit.

[Christ], our Lord and God, was once and for all to offer himself to God the Father by his death on the altar of the cross, to accomplish there an everlasting redemption. But because *his priesthood* was not to end with his death, at the Last Supper “on the night when he was betrayed,” [he wanted] to leave to His beloved spouse the Church *a visible sacrifice* (as the nature of man demands) by which the bloody sacrifice which he was to accomplish once for all on the cross would be *re-presented* its memory *perpetuated until the end of the world*, and its salutary power be applied to the forgiveness of the sins we daily commit {187 Council of Trent (1562): DS 1740; cf. *1Cor* 11:23; *Heb* 7:24, 27} (CCC-1366). (*emphasis added*)

“*To the Ends of the Earth: Action*” <sup>61</sup>

The book is part of a series of bible studies for Catholic Men. The book cover pictures a Monstrance with the Eucharist. Under the picture is the word “ACTION.” The promo on Amazon reads: “Men of action—jumping in to help, to save, to win ... lives are at stake ... for eternity.” McCann breaks down the call for action to “ten of the most fundamental principles of the Catholic Faith.” Teaching them how they can draw strength “from the Eucharist, the sacraments, sacrifice, prayer, and other men.” This strength will then give them the ability to “live a life of boldness, carrying the truth of the Gospel to your world.” —*Mark C. McCann, Our Sunday Visitor*

“The Power of Eucharistic Preaching” <sup>62</sup>

“*This is a very touching truth*, for if we want the bread of life, if we are attracted to the Blessed Sacrament, then it means that the eternal Father is drawing us through love for his Son. This goes for all the truths of the Faith that have been showed to us through Christ.

“The Savior, the greatest of preachers, who day and night lives in the Blessed Sacrament of the altar, loving us and ‘ever living to intercede for



us’ without speaking a word. The silence of the sacrament is the greatest homily of all.” —*Benedict, Daily Rosary Family*

The *Eucharist is the heart and the summit of the Churches life* (CCC-1407). *(emphasis added)*

And it is the same Christ, really present under the species of bread and wine, who is the offering of the *Eucharistic sacrifice* (CCC-1410). *(emphasis added)*

“*The Most Holy Body and Blood of Christ*” Sunday Bulletin, June 23, 2019:  
“Help \_\_\_\_\_ Spread the Gospel!” From Mercer County to a Mission trip in Russia. God called me out of my comfort zone ... I am a life-long member of Holy Trinity ... I have grown alongside a group of FOCUS missionaries, Fellowship of Catholic University Students ... I have taken ownership of my faith and ... desire to share my ‘Love for Christ’ with others!

“For a month this summer ... it will be serving on a mission in Vladivostok, Russia ... to bring back the faith after years of communism and atheism ... volunteering in an orphanage and hospice facility and putting on a summer camp to help young adults ‘Encounter Jesus!’” —*Cluster of Parishes, Coldwater Ohio*

By the consecration, the transubstantiation of the bread and wine into *the body and blood of Christ*, is brought about. *Under the consecrated species* of bread and wine *Christ himself, living, and glorious is present* in a true, real, and substantial manner: his Body and his Blood, with *his soul and his divinity* {cf. Council of Trent: DS 1640; 1651} (CCC-1413). *(emphasis added)*

“Is Transubstantiation Unbelievable?”<sup>63</sup>

“All Christians believe in an omnipotent God who could perform the miracle of transubstantiation if he willed it to happen.

“*That God who inspired Scripture built a Church based on the Eucharist.*

“If one cannot accept transubstantiation simply because it seems counterintuitive or implausible, it is difficult to see how one could remain a Christian at all.” (*emphasis added*) —Douglas Beaumont, *Catholic Answers*

The gifts of his creation, bread, and wine ... have become the body and blood of Christ. Christ is thus *really and mysteriously made present* (CCC-1357). (*emphasis added*)

As a sacrifice, the *Eucharist is also offered in reparation* for the sins of the living and the dead and to obtain spiritual or temporal benefits from God (CCC-1414). (*emphasis added*)

*In brief, the Eucharist is the sum and summary of our faith:* “Our way of thinking is attuned to the *Eucharist*, and the *Eucharist* in turn confirms our way of thinking” (CCC-1327). (*emphasis added*)

*The ABC's of the Mass ... for children* <sup>64</sup>

Which is better a letter from Grandma or a hug?

Which is better a call from Dad or when Dad comes home?

“The real thing is better!”

Which is better the [biblical] stories about Jesus love and the miracles he used to do or the miracle of the Eucharist?

“The REAL THING is better ... Jesus is the miracle that happens at Mass ... When the bread and wine become his Body and Blood, and Jesus and his love are there for REAL!” —Francine M. O'Connor

## LAY PEOPLE IN CHRIST'S PRIESTLY OFFICE AND GOOD WORKS

“For all their works, prayers, and apostolic undertakings, family and married life, daily work, *relaxation of mind and body*. If they are accomplished in the Spirit—indeed even the hardships of life if patiently born—all these become *spiritual sacrifices* acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. In the celebration of the *Eucharist* these may most fittingly *be offered* to the Father along *with the body of the Lord*. And so, worshipping everywhere

by their holy actions, the laity consecrate the world itself to God, everywhere *offering worship by the holiness of their lives*” (CCC-901). (*emphasis added*)

The *Eucharist* is also *the sacrifice of the Church*. The Church which is the Body of Christ participates in the offering of her head. *With him, she herself is offered whole and entire*. She unites herself to his intercession *with the Father* for all men. *In the Eucharist, the sacrifice of Christ becomes also, the sacrifice of the members of his Body*. \**The lives of the faithful, their praise, sufferings, prayers, and work, are united with those of Christ and with his total offering, and so acquire a new value, Christ’s sacrifice present on the altar makes it possible for all generations of Christians to be united with his offering* {188 Council of Trent (1562): DS 1743; cf. *Heb. 9:14, 27*} (CCC-1368). (*emphasis added*)

“At Catholic Mass, the priest pours a few drops of water into the cup of wine to be consecrated into the Blood of Christ. This symbolizes our little sacrifices offered along with the Blood of the Lamb on the altar. For it is the altar that the one redemptive sacrifice of Christ is made present for us, and it is the best moment to offer our sacrifices and our very selves to God the Father.” —*Rev. Stechschulte, The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

“Why does the priest add that small drop of water with the wine at consecration?” <sup>65</sup>

“Our Church Fathers believed the water is understood as the people and the wine is understood to be the blood of Christ. When the water is mixed with the wine, the people are made one with Christ. We are now conjoined with Christ and nothing can separate the two. We become the Body of Christ, conjoined with Him ... there must be a comingling of the two.”  
—*dberns, Questions from Religion Class*

To the offering of Christ are united not only the members still here on earth, but *also those already in the glory of heaven* (CCC-1370). (*emphasis added*)

*St. Augustine* ... This wholly redeemed city, the assembly and society of the saints, is offered to God as *a universal sacrifice ... in what she offers she herself is offered* {194 *St. Augustine, De civ. Dei*, 10, 6: Pl 41, 283; cf. *Rom. 12:5*} (CCC-1372). (*emphasis added*)

*The Eucharistic sacrifice is also offered for the faithful departed* who “Have died in Christ but are not yet *wholly purified*” {191 Council of Trent (1562): DS 1743} ... By offering to God our supplications for those who have fallen asleep if they have sinned, we ... offer Christ sacrificed for the sins of all, and so render favorable, for them and for us, the God who loves man {193 St Cyril of Jerusalem, *Cateh. Myst.* 5, 9. 10: PG 33, 1116–1117} (CCC-1371). (*emphasis added*)

“Francis Chan and his dream of a Eucharist rooted in the Early Church” <sup>66</sup>

“Evangelical pastor Francis Chan recently made some very interesting comments about ... the Real Presence:

“I didn’t know that for the first fifteen hundred years of church history, everyone saw [communion] as the literal body and blood of Christ ... I’ve been dreaming about this. I’ve been praying about this, going, man: I would love it if one day ... here in the U.S., people understood the body of Christ, that they were just a part of it, and they got excited to gather and partake of the body and blood of Christ.

“In another video ... he continues to explore this new direction.

‘I’m supposed to preach the Gospel by taking communion?... Let’s bring communion back to the forefront.’

“St. Ignatius of Antioch (35-108) on the early *heretics* the Docetists: (*emphasis added*)

“They abstain from the Eucharist and from prayer because they do not confess that the Eucharist is the flesh of our Savior Jesus Christ, flesh which suffered for our sins.” —*Matthew Becklo, Aleteia, 1/20/2020*

## 9. (Biblical)

### **The Priestly Office of Earthly Saints: Spiritual Sacrifices and Maintaining Good Works**

Remember Beaumont’s comment earlier—“All Christians believe in an omnipotent God who could perform the miracle of transubstantiation if he willed it to happen.”

The qualified answer is no, all Christians do not believe God could do the miracle of transubstantiation because it would go against the truths revealed in scripture. God, Jesus, and the apostles performed miracles that could be seen, eaten (bread/fish) and touched so that the miracle would prove their love and message.

The supposed miracle of transubstantiation is unscriptural, unobservable, and unqualified, there is absolutely, no proof. If the only proof someone has that something is good, and right is that “God can do anything that he wants” then why can’t he save us in the way that is provable as described in the scripture? Jesus proved himself to be God by the physical miracles he performed which could be seen, thus proving that he can perform the miracle of a spiritual new birth by faith. The baptism of the Holy Spirit cannot be seen but the effects of the baptism can be seen in those who were touched/filled by the Spirit.

Here is a question for Catholics to ponder, if, as Paul wrote, “Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God” (1 Cor. 15:50) and if, as John wrote, “We know that when he (Jesus) shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is” (1 John 3:2). How or where does Jesus get this flesh and blood from to change the Eucharist into, when he is currently in his immortal heavenly body in heaven? And how can Jesus give both his resurrected body and his physical body, which died on the cross, for us to eat and drink at the same time?

If the only proof we need to teach something that is controversial is to say that “God could do a miracle and make it happen if he wanted to” then there is no limit on what could be taught! The true miracle of God is changing a sinner into a saint.

In the following scriptures the Apostles Peter and Paul speak concerning True Worship, True Sacrifice and True Godliness.

Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, a *holy priesthood*, to offer up *spiritual SACRIFICES*, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ ... But *ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people*; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light ... Dearly beloved, I beseech you as *strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts*, which war against the soul; Having your *conversation honest* among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which

they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation. *Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man* for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. For so is the will of God, that with *well doing* ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men ... *honour all men. love the brotherhood. fear God. Honour the king.* Servants *be subject to your masters* with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the forward. For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? But if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God. For even hereunto were ye called: because *Christ* also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should *follow his steps*: Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when *he* was reviled, *reviled not* again; when he suffered, *he threatened not; but committed himself* to him that judgeth righteously: Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to sins, should *live unto righteousness*: by whose stripes ye were healed. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are *now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.* (1 Pet. 2:5, 9, 11–15, 17–25)

A saints financial giving is considered an acceptable Sacrifice.

Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me as concerning *giving and receiving*, but ye only. For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity. Not because I desire fruit that may abound to your account. But I have all, and abound, I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which *were sent* from you, an odour of a sweet smell, *a SACRIFICE acceptable, well-pleasing to God.* (Phil. 4:15–18)

Watch out for *strange doctrines*, for example: the unbloody sacrifice of the Mass, the Eucharist, and the supposed joining of human suffering and good works to assist Jesus in the taking away of the sins of the world. We are also looking with anticipation for the

coming heavenly city, the New Jerusalem. We are not building a lasting city here, such as the Vatican City or a worldwide religion.

*Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with GRACE; not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein. We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle. For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp. Wherefore, Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own BLOOD, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach. For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. By him therefore, let us offer the SACRIFICE of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name. But to do good and to communicate forget not: For with such SACRIFICES God is well pleased. (Heb. 13:9–16)*

We are to present our bodies as a living sacrifice, be good, work hard, distribute to the needy, be not conformed to the world's sinful habits and overcome evil with good.

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a *living SACRIFICE, holy* acceptable unto God, which is your *reasonable service* ... be not *conformed to this world* ... be ye *transformed* by the *renewing* of your mind, that ye may *prove* what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God ... *abhor* that which is evil; *Cleave* to that which is good ... not *slothful* in business ... *distributing* to the necessity of the saints; given to *hospitality* ... *recompense* to no man evil for evil. *Provide things honest* in the sight of all men.

If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, *live peaceably* with all men. Dearly beloved, *avenge not yourselves*, but rather give place unto wrath: *for it is written, vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.* Therefore, if thine enemy hunger, *feed him*; if he, thirst *give him drink*: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire (guilt/repentance) on his head. *Be*

*not overcome of evil but overcome evil with good.* (Rom. 12:1–2, 9, 11, 13–14, 17–21)

And be ye *kind* one to another, *tenderhearted*, *forgiving* one another, *even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.* Be ye therefore *followers of God*, as dear children . . . And *walk in love*, as *Christ* also hath *loved us*, and hath given himself for us an *offering* and a *SACRIFICE* to God for a *sweet smelling savour.* (Eph. 4:32; 5:1–2)

The offering of Jesus took place only once, and it was for all sin. This one offering forever perfected those who are sanctified. God remembers their sins no more.

“350,000 Catholic Masses a day! Now This is Communion” <sup>67</sup>

“Aug. 31, 2010 (www.fallibleblogma.com)—There is an estimated (at least) 350,000 Catholic Masses celebrated every day ... 4 priests saying ... ‘Do this in memory of me,’ every single second ... literally and continually making present Christ’s (once and for all) sacrifice on Calvary ... 350,000 daily Masses ... (you wanna talk about a ‘mega-church’?) ... We are all joined in ... and we partake of the same, specific Eucharist.” —*Matthew Warner, For Catholic Holy Mass*

“Is every single minute of the year a mass being celebrated in the Roman Catholic Church? If so, since when?” Asked May 7, 2017. <sup>68</sup>

“I am inclined to say yes.

“Once the West of now-US/then-Mexico (UTC -6) was finally conquered by the Spaniards; and Catholic churches and monasteries were established, we could be more or less sure a Catholic mass was celebrated at all times of the day, every week, and year—between the XVI (16th) and XVII (17th) centuries.” —*Christianity Stack Exchange*

The saint and martyr of the Church, the Apostle Paul teaches otherwise.



We are *sanctified* through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ *ONCE for all*. And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices [the Mass?], which can never take away sins [the Mass is an “unbloody” sacrifice]: But this man, after he offered *ONE* sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by *ONE offering* he hath perfected for ever them that are *sanctified*. Whereof, the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. Now were remission of these is, there is *no more offering* for sin. Having therefore, brethren, *boldness to enter-into the holiest by the BLOOD of Jesus ... Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith ... Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering ... And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works.* (Heb. 10:10–19, 22–24)

While on earth, faithful Catholics are seeking and focused on the Eucharist; for the faithful Biblical Christian/Christian, our seeking and affections are above where Christ is sitting at God’s right hand. We are encouraged by the apostle Paul, not concerning the Eucharist, but that each believer would “Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly.”

If ye then be risen with Christ, *seek* those things which are *above ... Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is, hid with Christ in God ... Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry ... also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. Lie not one to another ... put off the old man with his deeds ... put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him ... put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.* And above

all these things *put on charity*, which is the bond of perfectness. And let the *peace of God* rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body and be ye *thankful*. Let the *word of Christ* dwell in you richly in all wisdom; *teaching and admonishing* one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, *singing* with grace in your hearts *to the Lord*. And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the *name of the Lord Jesus*, giving thanks to God and the Father by him. (Col. 3:1-17)

10. (Catholicism)

**Final Purification--Purgatory**

All who die in God’s grace and friendship, but still imperfectly purified, are indeed assured of their eternal salvation; but *after death they undergo purification, so as to achieve the holiness necessary to enter the joy of heaven* (CCC-1030). (*emphasis added*)



“Purgatory for All?” <sup>69</sup>

“Q. ... *Will purgatory be applied to all people in denominations outside of the Catholic Church?* (Name withheld via e-mail)

“A. *Yes*, perhaps to the surprise of some, it will. The reasons ... godly perfection (see Matt. 5:48) ... nothing imperfect or impure

will enter heaven (Rev. 21:27) ... God ‘who began a good work in you will continue it until the day of Christ Jesus’ (Phil. 1:6).

“The fact is most, if not all ... are going to need some sort of final purifications that will complete the work of God in us ... purge us from ... the world ... help us let go of hurts and sorrows and burn away the final imperfections (see 1 Cor. 3:13-14).

“Those in other denominations are under the same obligations and receive the same promises that we have in this regard.” —Rev. Msgr. Charles E. Pope, *The Catholic Answer*



The Church gives the name \**Purgatory* to this *final purification of the elect* ... formulated ... at the Councils of Florence and Trent {605 Cf. *1 Cor.* 3:15; *1 Pet* 1:7} ... whoever utters blasphemy against the Holy Spirit will be pardoned neither in this age nor in the age to come. From this *sentence* we understand that certain offenses can be forgiven in this age, but certain others in the age to come {606 St Gregory the Great, *Dial.* 4, 39: PL 77, 396; cf. *Mt.* 12:31} (CCC-1031). (*emphasis added*)

“No Salvation Bargains”<sup>70</sup>

“Feb. 10 ... in which Gary Westgerdes wrote an article.” Paul Todd the author mentions Purgatory in his letter. He points out that Westgerdes quoted 17 or 18 scripture texts “It is quite impressive, that is, if one doesn’t know much about the Bible.”

Todd goes on to talk about putting to, much faith and hope in only one or more texts from the Bible. And that maybe some may think they can be saved on the threads of one or two texts, “But we cannot know on this earth whether partial belief is equal to full belief in matters of salvation.”

Continuing, Todd mentions frequently this idea of “bargain-basement salvation” by using only one or two verses. However, he says, “The Catholic Church, because it received its commission from Christ (John 21:15–17), has to take the whole Bible *and history* (*emphasis added*) into consideration when it teaches.” When encountering contradictory Scripture texts, Todd writes “The Church ... has to use established principles of interpretation in order to perceive the truth.” —*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

*This teaching is also based on the practice of prayer for the dead ...* “Therefore [Judas Maccabeus] made *atonement for the dead*, that they might be delivered from their sin.” {607 2 *Macc.* 12:46}. From the beginning the Church has honored the memory of the dead and offered prayers in suffrage for them, *above all the Eucharistic sacrifice*, so that, *thus purified, they may attain the beatific vision of God* {608 Cf. Council of Lyons II (1274): DS 856}. The Church also commends *almsgiving*, *\*indulgences*, and works of penance undertaken on behalf of the dead: Let us help and commemorate them (CCC-1032) (*emphasis added*)

“Introduction to indulgences”<sup>71</sup>

“‘Enchiridion’ means ‘handbook,’ and the Enchiridion of Indulgences is the Church’s official handbook on what acts and prayers carry indulgences and what indulgences actually are—‘the remission before God of the temporal punishment due sins already forgiven as far as their guilt is concerned’ ... forgiveness of sin is separate from punishment for sin.” Forgiveness comes through the sacrament of confession but the punishment for sin still-remains. [Westgerdes: If you remember Jesus death and resurrection only *opened* the doors to heaven (CCC-1026).]

There are only two kinds of indulgences, one removes only a “part of the temporal punishment due for sin,” a partial indulgence; the other a “plenary indulgence removes all” of the punishment. While still living on earth the punishment comes through various sufferings, after death it comes through purgatory. —*Catholic Online*

*Enchiridion Indulgentiarum*, 1968 edition, no. 50

“A *partial indulgence* is granted to the faithful who use *Sacred Scripture* for *spiritual* reading with the *veneration* due the word of God. A *plenary indulgence* is granted if the reading continues for *at least one-half hour*.” (*emphasis added*)

The Apocrypha book Tobit

It is better to give *alms* than to lay up gold: For *alms* doth deliver from death and shall purge away *all sin*. (Tobit 12:8–9)

“Quotes on Purgatory”<sup>72</sup>

“Purgatory basically means that God can put the pieces back together again. That He can cleanse us in such a way that we are able to be with Him and can stand there in the fullness of life. Purgatory strips off from one person what is unbearable from another the inability to bear certain things, so that in each of them a pure heart is revealed, and we can see that we all belong together in one enormous symphony of being.” —**Pontiff Benedict XVI**

“(Priest) Stinson’s Letter for All Souls Day 2019”<sup>73</sup>

“Dear Friend in Christ,

“We know from sacred Scripture that nothing unclean can enter Heaven ... *during His Passion and death, Christ earned infinite merits that opened the gates of Heaven to all those who earnestly seek it. (emphasis added)*

**“Will You Rescue Eight Souls This November?”**

“We can and should pray for the Holy Souls in Purgatory every day ... Holy Mother Church makes it possible *to earn a plenary indulgence each day* for a soul in Purgatory ... a plenary indulgence removes all of the temporal punishment due as a result of a person’s sins.

“From November 1 ... 8, the Church offers a plenary indulgence each day for all those who visit a cemetery to pray for the faithful departed. So, if you pray at a cemetery daily, receive Communion daily, pray for the Pope’s intentions daily, make a good Confession that week, and are free from attachment to sin, you could rescue eight souls this November!

“Help Your Loved Ones Get Out of Purgatory.” —*Priest Michael Stinson, FSSP, North American Superior*

10. (Biblical)

**Purification: Jesus’s Own Blood**

Jesus speaks on the cost of forgiveness and what will not be forgiven.

He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.

Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (Matt. 12:30–32)

The *blood* of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from *all sin*. (1 John 1:7)

For other *foundation* can no man lay than that is laid, which is *Jesus Christ*. (1 Cor. 3:11)

Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider *the Apostle and High Priest* of our profession, *Christ Jesus* ... by his own blood he entered in *once* into the Holy Place, having obtained *eternal redemption* for us ... How much more shall the *blood of Christ*, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without *spot* to God, purge your conscience from dead works to *serve the living God*? ... and almost all things are by law purged with *blood*; and *without shedding of blood is no remission* ... Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected *us*, and we gave *them* reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for *our* profit, that *we* might be partakers of his holiness ... *follow peace* with all men, and *holiness*. Without which no man shall see the Lord. (Heb. 3:1; 9:12, 14, 22; 12:9–10, 14)

No blood is shed for the cleansing of sin in Purgatory. No blood is shed in the many qualifying acts done for an early release from Purgatory. These acts would also include the saying of “unbloody” Masses.

We have boldness to enter heaven through Jesus's cleansing blood, so we too should live holy lives. Lives without sin and lives of love. God is sinless and God is love, he is holy.

Wherefore, gird up the loins of your mind, be *sober*, and *hope* to the *end* for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; *as obedient children*, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye *holy* in all manner of conversation; *Because it is written, be, ye holy; for I am holy.* (1 Pet. 1:13–16)

God the Father has placed all the fullness of the believer's salvation in Jesus, that, which Jesus accomplished through his shed blood and his bodily death on the Cross. Therefore, since Jesus does not die or shed blood during the celebration of the Mass or in the partaking of the sacraments, no one can be reconciled with God through them.

For it pleased the Father that in him should *all fullness dwell*; and, having made peace through the *blood of his cross* ... and you ... hath he *reconciled* in the *body of his flesh* through *death* ... If ye continue in the *faith* grounded and settled and *be not moved away from the hope of the \*gospel.* (Col. 1:19–23)

God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ *\*died* for us. Much more then, being now justified by his *blood*, we shall be saved from wrath through him. (Rom. 5:8–9)

Those who have received this redemption by faith “God dwelleth in him” and the fear of judgment and torment are lost in the presence of God's love.

*Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgement: because as he is, so are we in this world. There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment, he that feareth is not made perfect in love.* (1 John 4:17–18)

If someone is fearing torments in hell or even purgatory, they have not been made perfect in love through faith in Christ, all your efforts to appease God will come to naught. God's wrath has been appeased with Jesus's sinless blood sacrifice and you need to by faith be in him to wipe out your sin debt. If you say, you do not want to give up your sinful habits, then you will have to pay for them yourself with your own sinless blood. What? You do not have any, well, that is not good.

The former hell bound sinner's, now believer's sin debt, is washed away by Jesus sinless blood. God's love has given assurance with his gift of everlasting life and now they are called to live out their new life for the glory of God. Innocent spotless/sinless blood is the only sacrifice God will accept for the forgiveness of sin. Jesus is the only one who can fulfill this sacrifice, which he has already done, declaring it "finished" and he only needed to do it once, Adam only had to sin once to pass his sin nature onto us, all of mankind. Jesus came to abolish the old law of repeated animal blood sacrifices, by himself, being the Lamb of God. He is the narrow way to everlasting life.

*Put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness ... That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the \*gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which, is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory. (Eph. 4:24; 1:12-14)*

There were false prophets ... there shall be false teachers among you ... damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them ... many shall follow ... *the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. (2 Pet. 2:2)*

*Jesus saith ... I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6)*

There were false prophets among the Israelites, and there will be false teachers among the Christians. They will deny that simply Jesus is enough. They will deny that God's Word is the truth that we need to trust.



*The LORD is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide ... He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Ps. 103:8–12)*

*Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool ... for peace I had great bitterness: but thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption: for thou hast cast all my sins behind thy back.” (Isa. 1:18; 38:17)*

Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression ... he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy, He will *turn* again he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.” (Mic. 7:18–19)

Saith the LORD: *for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.* (Jer. 31:34)

*Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out.* (Acts 3:19)

If Jesus were still on the earth, he would not be a priest, therefore, Catholic Priest who are supposedly acting in place of or on behalf of Jesus cannot be priest.

*Now ... This is the sum: We have such, an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man ... For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law: Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of*

God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, saith he, that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount. But *now* hath he obtained a more *excellent ministry*, by how much also he is the mediator of a *better covenant*, which was established upon *better promises*. For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the *second*. For *finding fault with them*, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah. (Heb 8:1–4, 6–8)

There *is* therefore *now no condemnation* to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me *free* from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, *God sending his own son* in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, *condemned sin* in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who *walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit* ... For to be *carnally minded is death*; but to be *spiritually minded is life and peace* ... they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But *ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit*, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man, have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And *if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness*. But if the Spirit of him that *\*raised* up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that *\*raised* up Christ from the dead shall also *quicken* your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. Therefore, brethren, we are *debtors*, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die, but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. *For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God*. (Rom. 8:1–14)

Above we see the Trinity of God: the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit working in unison on our behalf in our salvation and the welcome into God’s family.

Below we see the accumulation of God’s salvific plan and that for now, the way to the tree of life is still open to all earthly inhabitants through faith in Christ.

*Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand. And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us and washed us from our sins in his own blood, And, hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*

*And they Sung a New Song, saying, Thou, art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast \*slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; and hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.*

*Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without are dogs ... sorcerers ... whoremongers ... murderers ... idolaters and WHOSOEVER LOVETH AND MAKETH A LIE.*

*I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star. And the Spirit and the bride Say, come. And let him that heareth say, come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely ... He which testifieth these things saith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen. (Rev. 1:3, 5–7; 5:9–10; 22:14–17, 20–21)*

Did you notice that the last sin mentioned above was about liars? Within Christendom, we have our share of liars and false teachers who abound in many forms, from false spiritual teachings to those who are greedy for money.

Paul gives a warning concerning Jesus's return.

*But of the times and seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and*

they shall not escape. *But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness ... But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and an, helmet, the hope of salvation. For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, who, \*died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him. Wherefore, comfort, yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do. (1 Thess. 5:1–5, 8–11)*

## 11. (Catholicism)

### **Communion of Saints and the Church Treasury: “The Holiness of One Profits Others”**

“The life of *each* of God’s children is joined in Christ and through Christ in a wonderful way to the life of all the other Christian brethren in the *supernatural unity* of the *Mystical Body* of Christ, as in a single *mystical person*” (CCC-1474). (*emphasis added*)

“A *perennial link* of charity exists between the faithful ... (in their) *heavenly home*, those ... expiating their sins in *purgatory* and those ... still pilgrims on *earth*. Between them there is ... *an abundant exchange* of all good things.” In this wonderful exchange, the *holiness of one, profits others well beyond the harm that the sin of one* could cause others. Thus, recourse to *the communion of saints lets the contrite sinner be more promptly and efficaciously purified of the punishment for sin* (CCC-1475). (*emphasis added*)

We also call these spiritual goods of the communion of saints the *Church’s treasury*, ... the ‘treasury of the Church’ is the infinite value, *which can never be exhausted, which Christ’s merits have before God* ... In Christ ... the satisfactions and merits of his Redemption exist and find their efficacy” (CCC-1476). (*emphasis added*)

“This *treasury includes*, as well the prayers and good works of the Blessed Virgin Mary ... the prayers and good works of all the saints ... who have followed in the footsteps of Christ the Lord ... *they attained their own salvation* and at the same time *cooperated in saving their brothers in the unity of the Mystical Body*” {88 *Indulgentiarum doctrina*, 88} (CCC-1477). (*emphasis added*)

Through *indulgences* the faithful can obtain the *remission* of temporal punishment resulting from sin for themselves and ... for the souls in Purgatory (CCC-1498). (*emphasis added*)

An *indulgence* ... through the action of the *Church* ... dispenses and *applies* with authority the treasury of the satisfaction of Christ and the saints ... to the *living or the dead* (CCC-1471).

## 11. (Biblical)

### **The Holiness of Jesus Christ Profits Each Individual Who Believes**

The *preaching of the cross* is to them that *perish foolishness*. (1 Cor. 1:18)

Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my *\*gospel*, and the *preaching of Jesus Christ*, according to the revelation of *the mystery*, which was *kept secret* since the world began, *but now is made manifest*, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, *made known to all nations for the obedience of faith*: To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen. (Rom. 16:25–27)

Be ready to do good works but remember, it is by God's mercy that we are saved:

Be ready to every good work, to *speak* evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, *shewing* all meekness unto all men. *For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish*, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another. *But* after that the kindness and love of God *our Saviour* toward man *appeared*, not, *by works of righteousness which we have done*, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; *which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour*; *that being justified by his grace*, we should be made *heirs* according to the *hope of eternal life*. (Titus 3:1–7)

For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching, us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; looking for that *blessed hope*, and the *glorious appearing* of the *great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ*; who gave himself for us, that he might *redeem* us from all iniquity, and *purify* unto himself a *peculiar* people, *zealous* of good works. These things *speak*, and *exhort*, and *rebuke* with all authority. Let no man despise thee. Put them in mind to *be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates*. (Titus 2:11–15; 3:1)

*Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, to the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.* (Jude 1:24–25)

And a voice came out of the throne, saying, *Praise, our God*, all ye his *servants*, and ye that *fear* him, both small and great. And I heard as it were the *voice* of a great multitude, and as the *voice* of many waters, and as the *voice* of mighty thunderings, saying, *Alleluia*: for the *Lord God* omnipotent reigneth. *Let us* be glad and rejoice and *give* honour to him: for the *marriage* of the Lamb is come, and his *wife* hath made herself *ready*. And to her was granted that she should be *arrayed* in fine linen, *clean and white*: for the fine linen is the *righteousness* of saints. And he saith unto me, *Write, Blessed*, are they which are called unto the *marriage supper* of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These, are the *true sayings* of God ... And I saw *heaven opened*, and behold a *white* horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war ... And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in *blood*: and his name is called *The Word of God*. And the *armies* which were in heaven followed him upon *white* horses, clothed in fine linen, *white and clean*. And out of his mouth goeth a *sharp sword*, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a *rod of iron*: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness of wrath of Almighty God. And

he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, *KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS*. (Rev. 19:5–9, 11, 13–16)

## 12. (Catholicism)

### The Anointing of the Sick “Fortifies the End of Our Earthly Life”

The *sacrament of the anointing of the sick ... completes our conformity to the death and Resurrection of Christ*, just as *Baptism* began it. It completes the holy anointing that mark the whole Christian life that of *Baptism*, which *sealed* the new life in us, and that of *Confirmation*, which *strengthened* us, for the combat of this life. This last *anointing fortifies* the end of our earthly life like *a solid rampart for the final struggles* before entering the Father’s house (CCC-1523). (*emphasis added*)



*In addition, ... The Church offers ... The Eucharist as vaticum. Communion in the body and blood of Christ, received, at this moment of “passing over” to the Father, has a, particular-significance, and importance. It is the seed of eternal life and the power of resurrection, according to the words of the Lord: “He who eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.” The sacrament of Christ once dead and now risen, the Eucharist is here the sacrament of passing over from death to life, from this world to the Father (CCC-1524).*

*My First Catechism*—a children’s book. <sup>74</sup>

“The Holy Eucharist is Jesus Christ after the bread and wine have been changed into His Body and Blood at Mass.

“In the Mass Jesus gives Himself to His Father as He did on the cross, but He does not suffer anymore.

“In Holy Communion Jesus gives me Himself as food for my soul.” —*Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D.*

Penance, the Anointing of the Sick and the Eucharist as viaticum constitute at the end of Christian life “the sacraments that prepare for our heavenly homeland” or the sacraments that complete the earthly pilgrimage (CCC-1525). (*emphasis added*)

“Catholic Infallibility” <sup>75</sup>

Paul Todd thinks that former Catholics “are being hoodwinked out of their faith ... some Protestant preacher will come along and swallow them up with the message of the Gospel.”

Todd recognizes that “Catholic and Protestant interpretation of the Scriptures are diametrically opposed to one another ... the Catholic is taught ... by the Church. He knows that his judgment can be wrong, but the Catholic Church cannot be wrong, because Christ Himself promised to guide it and keep it from error.”

Todd gives an example using the Constitution and the Supreme Court, the Court is, in charge of interpreting the Constitution. And, in the same way, the Bible and the Catholic Church work. “So why should not ... the Church that gave the Bible to the world, may in case of doubt declare truly the meaning of the Bible?”

Todd points out that if Protestants want to hold the Scriptures as the rule of their faith, it can only be done as a theory. This is true because the Scriptures, “can be logically regarded as a rule of faith only on the assumption that an infallible voice declared its writings to be genuine and inspired.” —*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

**12. (Biblical)**

**Apostle Peter: “Thou (Jesus) hast the words of eternal life” (John 6:68).**

And when the tempter came to him, he said, If, thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It, is *written*, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every *word that*



*proceedeth out of the mouth of God.* (Matt. 4:3–4; see also Deut. 8:3; Luke 4:3–4; Eph. 6:17; John 1:10–14).

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, *but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life*, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed ... It is the *spirit* that *quickeneth*; the *flesh profiteth nothing*: The *words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life*. But there are some of you that *believe not* ... *Therefore, said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it, were given unto him of my Father*. From that time many of his disciples went back and walked no more with him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will, ye also go away? Then *Simon Peter* answered him, Lord, *to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life*. And *we believe and are sure* that thou art that Christ, the Son of the Living God. (John 6:27, 63–69)

Jesus saith ... *my meat* is to do the *will of him that sent me*, and to *finish his work*. (John 4:34)

Feeding on the true meat of Jesus does not mean consuming the Eucharist, but the obeying of Jesus will, to go out and spread the Gospel, the good news of the cleansing away of sin by his blood, through faith in his death, burial, and resurrection.

Here is apostle Paul's prayer for the saints.

For this cause *I bow my knees* unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ ... that he would grant you ... to be *strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man*; that *Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith*; that ye ... may be able to *comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ* ... that ye might be *filled with all the fullness of God* ... Unto him be glory in the Church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. *Amen*. (Eph. 3:1, 3, 5–12, 14, 16–19, 21)

Now unto him that is, able to do, exceeding, abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us. (Eph. 3:20)

Here is Paul thanking Christ Jesus for putting him into the ministry and using him as an example of his mercy and forgiveness.

Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is *our hope ... And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord*, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry ... *Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.* (1 Tim. 1:1, 12, 17)

### 13. (Catholicism)

#### **Catholic Church: Indispensable Minimum**

*The precepts of the Church* are set in the content of a *moral life bound to and nourished by a liturgical life*. The obligatory character ... is meant to guarantee to the faithful *the indispensable minimum* in the spirit of prayer and moral effort, in the growth in love of God and neighbor (CCC-2041). (*emphasis added*)

The *first precept* (“*You shall attend Mass on Sundays and holy days of obligation.*”) requires the faithful to participate in the Eucharistic celebration when ... on the day commemorating the Resurrection of the Lord.

The *second precept* (“*You shall confess your sins at least once a year.*”) ensures preparation for the Eucharist by the reception of the sacrament of reconciliation, which continues Baptism’s work of conversion and forgiveness.

The *third precept* (“*You shall humbly receive your Creator in Holy Communion at least during Easter season.*”) *guarantees as a minimum* the reception of the Lord’s Body and Blood in connection with the Paschal feasts, the origin and center of the Christian liturgy. (CCC-2042). (*emphasis added*)

The *fourth precept* (“*You shall keep holy the holy days of obligation.*”) completes the Sunday observation by participation in the principal liturgical feasts which honor the *mysteries* of the Lord, the Virgin Mary and the Saints.

The *Fifth precept* (“*You shall observe the prescribed days of fasting and abstinence.*”) ensures the times, of ascesis (the exercise of self-discipline) and penance which prepare us for the liturgical feasts; They help us acquire mastery over our instincts and freedom of heart.

The faithful *also* (*sixth precept*) have the duty of *providing for the material needs of the Church*, each according to his abilities. (CCC-2043). (*emphasis added*)

### 13. (Biblical)

#### **The Biblical Church's Indispensable Minimum: Deny and Lose Your Life**

If any man will come after me, let him *deny himself*, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will *lose his life* for my sake, the same shall save it. (Luke 9:23–24)

Mt. Calvary: *THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS*. And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him saying, If, thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, *Dost not thou fear God*, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we justly; for *we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss*. And he said unto Jesus, *Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom ... Jesus ... Verily I say unto thee, To day, shalt thou be with me in paradise*. (Luke 23:38–43)

#### **Precepts of Faith**

First precept: *Fear the God who can cast your sinful soul into hell*.

Second precept: *Recognize that you deserve to be cast into hell*.

Third precept: *Recognize Jesus's sinlessness*.

Fourth precept: *Recognize Jesus is the God of an eternal kingdom*.

Fifth precept: *Recognize Jesus's sacrifice on the cross as the payment for your sin*.

Sixth precept: *Recognize what is written for our blessing that Jesus gives assurance of forgiveness, salvation, and eternal life, which begins today! Right now! At the point of faith!*

Break out the white robes, the tambourines, dance, singing praises to the Lamb our King! (examples of salvation joy: Luke 15:1–32)

*There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner [who consumes the Eucharist? no] that repenteth. (Luke 15:10)*

An Old Testament saint's testimony of God's enduring mercy, "I called ... The Lord answered."

O give thanks unto the LORD; for he is *good*: because his *mercy* endureth for ever ... *I called* upon the LORD in distress: *The LORD answered* me, and set me in a large place ... it is better to *trust in the LORD* than to *put confidence in man* ... *The LORD is my strength and song, and is become my salvation* ... *I shall not die, but live, and declare the works of the LORD.*

The LORD hath chastened me sore: but he hath not given me over unto death. Open to me the gates of righteousness: I will go into them, and *I will praise the LORD*: This gate of the LORD, into which the righteous shall enter. *I will praise thee: for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation.* The stone which the builders refused is become *the head stone of the corner.* (Ps. 118:1, 5, 8, 14, 17–22)

For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. (Gal. 2:19)

Do not let others judge you based on religious observances.

Let no man therefore judge you *in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an, holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days.* (Col. 2:16)

For, brethren, *ye have been called unto liberty*; only *use* not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by *love* serve one another. For **ALL THE LAW IS FULFILLED IN ONE WORD**, *even in this ... LOVE thy neighbour as thyself.* (Gal. 5:13–14)

Keep your eyes on Jesus. Jesus is the one we are following.

But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all is prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled. *Repent ye therefore, and be converted*, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; And *he shall send Jesus Christ*, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. (Acts 3:18–21)

Do not be cursed, our Lord is coming.

If any man, love *not* the Lord Jesus Christ, *let him be Anathema, Maranatha*. (1 Cor. 16:22)

#### 14. (Catholicism)

#### **The Church: Mother, Teacher, Pillar, Bulwark, Guard “of Christ’s Words” and Hands on the “Confession of Faith”**

Salvation comes from God alone; but because *we receive the life of faith through the Church, she is our mother*: “We believe the Church as the *mother of our new birth*, and not in the Church as if she were the author of our salvation.” Because she is our mother, she is also our *teacher* in the faith (CCC-169). (*emphasis added*)

*The Church*, “the *pillar and bulwark* of the truth,” faithfully *guards* “the faith which was once for all delivered to the saints.” She guards the memory of Christ’s words; it is she who ... *hands on* the apostles’ confession of faith {1 *Tim.* 3:15; *Jude* 3.} ... the *Church* our Mother *teaches us* the language of faith in order to *introduce us* to the understanding and the life of faith (CCC-171).

“For though languages differ ... the Tradition is one and the same. The Churches established in Germany have no other faith or Tradition, nor do those of the Iberians ... Celts ... East ... Egypt ... Libya, nor those established at the center of the world ...” The *Church’s message* “Is true and solid, in which *one and the same* way of salvation appears throughout the whole world” (CCC-174).

*Westgerdes*, for Catholics, Scripture and Tradition, are equal, and with the Magisterium the three are one in the work of salvation.

The *Church* ... “Does *not* derive her certainty about all ... truths from ... holy *Scriptures alone*. Both *Scriptures and Tradition* must be accepted and honored with *equal* sentiments of devotion and reverence” (CCC-82).

The *Magisterium* of the Church. “The task of giving an *authentic interpretation* of the Word of God ... written ... or ... Tradition, has been entrusted to *the living, teaching office of the Church alone*” (CCC-85).

*The infallibility* of the Magisterium ... extends to *all* the elements of *doctrine* (CCC-2051).

“Sacred *Tradition*, Sacred *Scriptures* and the *Magisterium* of the Church are so connected and associated that *one of them cannot stand without the others ... they all contribute effectively to the salvation of souls.*” (CCC-95).

“Newsletter: Catholic Communicator”<sup>76</sup>

“The new Catechism is a large and impressive book, but it will quickly direct us to four old fundamentals: The Creed, the Commandments, the Sacraments and prayer. On the one hand it will tell us that there is a lot to our Faith and that it is as up to date as the Twenty-first Century. On the other hand, it will encourage us to opt for the One Holy Catholic and Apostolic Church. It will say to cafeteria Catholics that paradoxically the only way to avoid indigestion is to swallow the Faith whole.” —*Bishop Thomas J. Welsh*

#### 14. (Biblical)

### **The Scriptures: God’s Written Word; Old and New Testaments Stand Alone, Unequaled**

But *unto the wicked God saith*, What, hast thou to do to declare my *statutes*, or that thou shouldest take my covenant in thy mouth? Seeing thou *hatest instruction, and castest my words behind thee*. (Ps. 50:16–17)

Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your *traditions*? ... Ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your *tradition*. (Matt. 15:3, 6)

For laying aside the *commandment* of God, ye hold the *tradition* of men ... Full well ye *reject the commandment* of God, that ye may keep your *tradition* ... Making the *word* of God of *none effect* through your *tradition*, which ye have delivered: and *many* such like things do ye. (Mark 7:8–9, 13)

In this passage, Paul put a limit on what he called traditions; they had to be taught by word or “our epistle.” Paul gives a true to this day example of a tradition that should be followed.

But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God *hath* from the beginning *chosen you* to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief in the truth: Whereunto he called you by our \*gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, brethren stand fast, and hold the *traditions* which ye have been taught, whether *by word, or our epistle*.

And the Lord direct your *hearts* into the *love* of God, and into the *patient waiting* for Christ.

Now we *command* you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the *tradition* which he received of us ... this we *commanded* you, that if any would not *work*, neither should he *eat*. (2 Thess. 2:13–15; 3:5–6, 10)

I believe that most of the traditions taught in the new testament relate to loving one another and not traditions which need to be carried out to help in the attaining of salvation.

Gleanings from Psalm 119 that you may consider incorporating into your life.

Thy Word: “I hid in my heart ... I will not forget ... my delight ... I trust in ... comforted myself ... the rejoicing of my heart ... I hope in ... I esteem ... giveth light ... giveth understanding ... order my steps ... thy servant loveth it ... I might meditate in ... is true from the beginning ... endureth for ever ... my heart standeth in awe ... I rejoice at ... my tongue shall speak of thy *word*.”

And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen ... Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to *my \*gospel.*" (Rom. 16:20, 25)

Here is Paul's heart felt desire for the saints.

That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the *mystery* of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge ... As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him: Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the *faith*, as ye have been *taught*, abounding therein with thanksgiving ... *in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him.* (Col. 2:2-3, 6-7, 9-10)

*To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.* (Rom. 16:27)

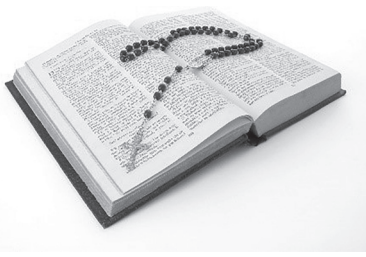
*Stand fast* therefore in the *liberty* wherewith Christ hath made us *free* and *be not entangled again* with the *yoke of bondage.* (Gal. 5:1)

**15. (Catholicism)**

**Mary**

*"\*MARY ... is inseparably linked with the saving work of her Son"* (CCC-1172).

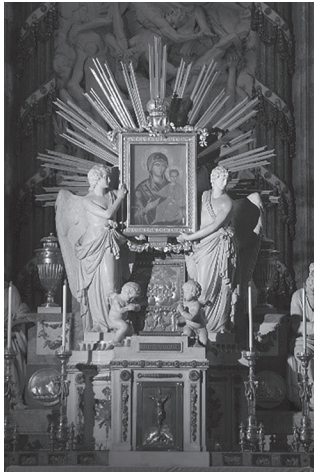
*Westgerdes*, I have seen this truth pictured in a 1<sup>st</sup> Communion drawing of Mary standing behind a chalice with a hovering Eucharist/Host.



*Mary ... the Mother of all the living.* We can pray *with and to her.* The prayer of the Church is *sustained by the prayer of Mary and united with it in hope* (CCC-2679).



Because of Mary’s singular co-operation with the action of the Holy Spirit, the Church loves to pray in communion with the Virgin Mary ... and to entrust supplications and praises to her (CCC-2682).



**15. (Biblical)**

**Mary is *not* Inseparably Linked with the Saving Work of Her Son** (see CCC-1172)

*Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. Now there was set a vessel of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, it is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost. (John 19:28–30)*

“You’re Too Late!” <sup>77</sup>

“Evangelist Billy Sunday preached in tent meetings ... a young man ... under great conviction found Billy Sunday ... ‘Oh Mister Sunday, I need to be saved. What can I do to be saved?’ Billy said, ‘I’m sorry, You’re too late.’ ... ‘Oh, but I wanted to be saved ... What must I do to be saved?’ ... Billy Sunday ... ‘You’re too late to do anything to be saved, for Jesus has already done it all. It’s finished. All you need to do is receive what He’s already done.’” —Adrian Rodgers, *LWF, Devotional*

For most individuals, having “Just God” is not enough; there is no room to enjoy religion or even a smidgen of evil.

Whom have I in heaven but thee? And there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee. My flesh and my heart faileth: but God, is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever. For, lo, they that are far from thee shall perish: thou hast destroyed all them that go a whoring from thee.

But it is good for me to *draw near to God: I have put my trust in the Lord GOD, that I may declare all thy works.* (Ps. 73:25–28)

Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he *understandeth and knoweth me*, that I am the LORD which exercise *lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth:* for in these things I delight, saith the LORD. (Jer. 9:23–24)

And *having*, an, high priest over the house of God; *let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith.* (Heb. 10:21–22)

For the LORD God is a sun and shield: The Lord will give grace and glory: *no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.* O LORD of hosts, *blessed, is the man that trusteth in thee.* (Ps. 84:11–12)

*Let them praise the name of the LORD:* for his name is excellent; His glory is above the earth and heaven. (Ps. 148:13)

Unto thee, *O LORD*, do I lift, up my *soul.* O my God, I *trust* in thee. (Ps. 25:1–2)

Our *Father* which art in heaven, hallowed be *thy* name. *Thy* kingdom come, *thy* will be done on earth, as it is in heaven ... For *thine* is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matt. 6:9–10, 13)

God the Father is the head of our heavenly home and his Son Jesus is the shepherd and greeter to the eternal kingdom. Why then do most people think their ideas will make heaven better?

For the *Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me*, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the *Father* and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the *Father* ...

These things I have spoken unto you, that *in me ye might have peace*. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. (John 16:27–28, 33)

*The LORD is my shepherd*; I shall not want. *He* maketh me to lie down in green pastures: *he* leadeth me beside the still waters. *He* restoreth my soul: *he* leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for *thou* art with me; *thy* rod and *thy* staff they comfort me. *Thou* preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: *thou* anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and *I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever*. (Ps. 23:1–6)

*But God*, who is rich in mercy ... *hath quickened us* together with Christ ... *hath raised us* up together ... *made us sit* together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: *That* in the ages to come *he* might shew the exceeding riches of *his* grace in *his* kindness toward us *through Christ Jesus* ... *now in Christ Jesus ye ... are made nigh* by the blood of Christ. *For he is our peace* ... Having abolished in his flesh the enmity ... for to make in himself of twain [Jews and Gentiles] one new man, so making peace; And that *he might reconcile both unto God* in one body *by the cross*, having slain the enmity thereby. (Eph. 2:4–7, 13–16)

*Salvation is of the LORD*. (Jon. 2:9)

*Be ye therefore followers of God*, as dear children; And *walk in love*, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour ... For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: *walk as children of light* ... Redeeming the time, because the days are evil ... Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, *singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord*; *GIVING THANKS ALWAYS FOR ALL THINGS*

*UNTO GOD* and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. (Eph. 5:1–2, 8, 16, 19–20)

There is no one we should be praying to but God the Father. And we should be praying in no one else’s name but Jesus’s.

Be careful, for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving *let your request be made known unto God*. (Phil. 4:6; see also Rom. 8:26–28; Acts 12:1–24)

Now *I pray to God* that ye do no evil. (2 Cor. 13:7)

**16. (Catholicism)  
Social Duty of Christians**

“Religious Americans: My faith isn’t the only way,” <sup>78</sup>

An AP Religion writer, shares that in 2008 a survey was done of 35,000 adults to check religious tolerance and the knowledge of their own beliefs. When asked, “Can *many religions* lead to eternal life?” these are the percentages of those who said Yes: (*emphasis added*)

Hindu came in at 89%, Buddhist 86%, Jewish 82%, *Catholic* 79%, (*emphasis added*) Orthodox Christian 72%, Protestant 66% which includes Evangelicals (57%), mainline (83%) and historically black churches (59%), Muslim 56%. “*On the Net: Source: Pew Forum on Religion and Public Life: <https://pewforum.org>.*”

“Some Christians hold strongly to Jesus’ words as described in John 14:6 ‘I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.’ Others emphasize the wideness of God’s grace.

“The Catholic church of Christ teaches that the ‘*one church of Christ ... subsists in the Catholic Church*’ alone and that Protestant churches while defective can be ‘*instruments of salvation.*’ ... More than most groups,

Catholics break with their church ... Only six in 10 Catholics described God as ‘a person with whom people can have a relationship’—which the church teaches—while three in 10 described God as an ‘impersonal force.’  
(*emphasis added*)

Quoting the Roman Catholic Archbishop of Denver, Charles Chaput: “The statistics show ... that many who describe themselves as Catholics do not know or understand the teachings of their church—Being Catholic means believing what the Catholic church teaches. It is a communion of faith, not simply of ancestry and family tradition. It also means that the church ought to work harder at evangelizing its own members.” —*Eric Gorski, The Daily Standard*

*The Social Duty* of Christians is to respect and awaken in each man the love of the true and the good. It requires them *to make known* the worship of *THE ONE TRUE RELIGION ... THE CATHOLIC ... CHURCH* (CCC-2105). (*emphasis added*)

“Know, Love, and DEFEND *your* Catholic Faith!”<sup>79</sup>

“Troy founded ‘Discover His Church Media’ to help Catholics defend their faith against ongoing attacks from both secular culture and anti-Catholic fundamentalists.”

In Troy’s book, *Evangelical Catholic*, he relates his experiences while “discovering the Catholic faith.” He reveals “the indisputable Biblical and historical evidence” which led him to embracing a conversion to Catholicism. —*Troy Guy*

*Westgerdes*, the following is my final step in my decision to leave the Catholic faith. The next article is an early example of a Catholic defending his faith against me, a fallen away Catholic.

Now is a good time to share this, I struggled quite intensely when trying to decide whether to stay in or leave the Catholic faith; Did I need to pray to Mary plus be a born-again Christian? Et Cetera. After around six

weeks, surprisingly, I decided to stay. I went to Mass the next Sunday and the first thing the Priest said was “Don’t worry about reading the book of Revelation because no one can understand it anyway!” Well I will tell you what, upon hearing that, unsurprisingly, the Holy Spirit told me, “Gary, now you can leave the Catholic Church.” I had already read the book of Revelation and knew that verse 1:3 says blessed is he who reads the words of this book. I needed that one last step—the confirmation from the Holy Spirit and I have never looked back.

“Life Without Meaning”<sup>80</sup>

Paul Todd writes about the disparity of fallen-away Catholics, “Perhaps the hardest thing for them is to see themselves clearly and honestly, as spiritually blinded, disturbed and saturated with pride.”

Todd is secure in his idea that fallen-away Catholics have “no rational foundation” and that obsession with quoting scripture after scripture shows their dilemma, ignorance, and lack of reasoning powers. On the other hand, Ordinary Catholics have “a sufficient knowledge to save” their souls. A fallen-away “can no longer understand the true sense of Scripture, the verdict of history and *the demands of logic.*” (*emphasis added*)

Todd continues, sharing how these Catholics who have left the faith will in worldly matters such as legal affairs or health issues, consult a specialist but with spiritual matters of most importance, their “eternal destiny at stake” will consider themselves “fully competent to decide the gravest issues ... *a guilty violation of reason and conscience.*” (*emphasis added*)

Todd’s final comment is “If a man loses his goods, he loses much. If he loses his life, he loses more. If he loses his faith, he loses all.” —*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

**16. (Biblical)**

**The Biblical Duty of Christians**

“Let’s quit fiddling with religion and do something to bring the world to Christ” —  
**Billy Sunday.**<sup>81</sup>

“Oprah’s Inconvenient Truth”<sup>82</sup>

A local pastor revealed in our local newspaper, that Oprah had hosted a panel to discuss spiritual matters, many religious views were expressed. Each view was considered equally valid, but at one point a lady in the audience stood and shared that, “the only way to heaven was through Jesus Christ.” Oprah responded, “One of the mistakes that human beings make is believing there is only one way ... There couldn’t possibly be only one way to God.”

The pastor shares, “An ounce of humility provides us enough honesty to admit we’ve all sinned or broken whatever moral code we subscribe to. If God exists ... and if our sins have offended him ... and he is loving enough to throw his creation a lifeline ... it isn’t impossible, or unreasonable or unfair for God to provide only one way. We are condemned criminals, sentenced to die for our crimes and the only thing a just God owes us is justice.” —*Mike Spencer, The Daily Standard*

The pastor gives scriptural support from: John 14:6; 8:24; Acts 4:12; 1 Tim. 2:5; Rom. 6:23; John 3:16 and Luke 9:23.

Believers in Christ responded to Saul’s (now Apostle Paul) persecution by preaching the word of Christ crucified.

And devout men carried Stephen *to his burial*, and made great lamentation over him ... Therefore, they that were scattered abroad went everywhere *preaching the word*. (Acts 8:2, 4)

Apostle Paul now converted, preaches the same word of Christ crucified.

*Preach the word*; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine ... watch thou in all things,

endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry ... I have fought ... I have finished ... I have kept the faith: Henceforth, *there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness*, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that *love his appearing*. (2 Tim. 4:2, 5, 7–8)

To them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called *to be saints*, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours ... Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all *speak the same thing*, that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment. For it hath been declared unto me ... that there are contentions among you ... every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas (Peter); and I of Christ. Is Christ divided? Or were ye baptized in the name of Paul? ... Christ sent me not to baptize, but to *preach the \*gospel ... the preaching of the cross ... we preach Christ crucified ... Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God*. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men ... *That no flesh should glory in his presence*. (1 Cor. 1:2, 10–13, 17, 23–25, 29)

Who then is Paul, and who *is* Apollos, but *ministers by whom ye believed*, even as the Lord gave to every man? I have *planted*, Apollos *watered*; but God gave the *increase*. So then neither is he that planteth anything, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase. Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and *every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour ... Therefore, let no man glory in men*. For all things are yours; Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas (Peter), or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours; and ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's. (1 Cor. 3:5–8; 21–23)

Apostle Paul speaks on and explains the mystery of our future inheritance, our hope in Christ's coming and our home in God's kingdom.



If in this life only we have *hope in Christ*, we, are of all men most miserable. But *now is Christ risen* from the dead and become *the first fruits* of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so *in Christ shall all be made alive*. But every man in his own *order: Christ the first fruits; afterward, they that are Christ's at his coming. Then cometh the end*, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father, when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. *The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death ...* And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. Now this I say, brethren, that *flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption*. Behold, I shew you a *mystery*; We shall not all sleep, but *we shall all be changed*, In, a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and *the dead shall be raised incorruptible*, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on *incorruption*, and this mortal must put on *immortality*. So, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed up in victory*. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. *But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through Our Lord Jesus Christ*. (1 Cor. 15:19–26, 49–57)

The true gospel of Scripture is under a constant threat of being perverted. Christians and Christian leaders are called to stay the course through the preaching of God's Word to the saints and at times openly rebuking Christian leaders who are going astray, such as Apostle Peter and Barnabas.

I marvel that ye are so soon removed from Him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another *\*gospel*: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you and would pervert the *\*gospel* of Christ. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other *\*gospel* unto you than that which we have *preached* unto you, let him be accursed. As we said before,

*so say I, now again, if, any man, preach, any other \*gospel (1 Corinthians 15:1–4; Jesus’s \*death, \*burial and \*resurrection) unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed. (Gal. 1:3–9)*

I went up by revelation and communicated unto them that *\*gospel which I preach* among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain. But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised: And that *because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus*, that they might bring us into bondage: To whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour; that *the truth of the \*gospel* might continue with you ... But when *Peter* was come to Antioch, *I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed*. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. But when I saw that *they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the \*gospel*, I said unto Peter before them all, If, thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?... *Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. (Gal. 2:2–5, 11–14, 16)*

Apostle Peter evidently accepted the Apostle Paul’s rebuke as he writes favorably concerning him.

But there were *false prophets* also among the people, even as there shall be *false teachers* among you, who privily shall bring in *damnable heresies*, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom *the way of truth shall be evil spoken of*. And through

covetousness shall they with *feigned words make merchandise of you*: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not ... For it had been better for them not to have known the way, of righteousness than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire ... *Nevertheless, we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness*. Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, *be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless*. And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is *salvation*; even as our beloved *brother Paul* also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; as also in *all his epistles*, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction. Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, *beware lest ye also*, being led away with the error of the wicked, *fall from your own steadfastness*. But grow in *grace*, and in the *knowledge* of our Lord and Saviour *Jesus Christ*. To him be glory both now and forever. Amen. (2 Pet. 2:1–3, 21–22; 3:13–18; see also 1 John 1:5–10; 2:1–6, 22, 25–29)

Marvel not, my brethren, if *the world hate you*. (1 John 3:13)

One of the *seven angels* ... talked with me, saying ... *I will shew unto thee the judgement of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters (people)*: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication ... *I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns*. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, *MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH*. And I saw the woman drunken with

*the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration ... the angel said ... Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns ... And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth ... and the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as, yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.*

*And he saith unto me, the, waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire, for God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth. (Rev. 17:1–7, 9, 12–18)*

Watch for grievous wolves who will covet, your money and apparel. All who are able should work to help support the weak no matter what their supposed ranking in the Church.

For I know this, after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also, of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them. Therefore, *watch, and remember*, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears. And now, brethren, *I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace*, which, is, able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified. *I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel.* Yea, ye yourselves know, that

*these hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me. I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, it is more blessed to give than to receive. (Acts 20:29–35)*

The godly duty of Christians is to preach and teach the Gospel of Jesus Christ and the doctrine of godliness—overcoming sin and loving others.



## Chapter Seven

# COMPARE THE EMPHASIS ON WHAT IS PREACHED: CATHOLICISM OR CHRIST

**I**n this chapter we will see that:  
Catholicism is focused on Catholicism. Preaching themselves and their *Catholic Truths*. Aiming to achieve their quest, for new converts and bringing lax Catholics back to the one true Church, the Catholic Church.

“Cruise Catholic! Private Charter on the Rhine River,”<sup>83</sup>

“Catholic Answers river cruises are the absolute standard in cruises for those whose principal interest is a full formation in Catholic life and culture. There is abundant good company ... congenial conversation, and informative talks on the Faith and history in the heartland of Europe. All cruisers will be aboard because of their love for Jesus Christ and his Church, and their support of Catholic Answers.” —*June 9–10, 2020, 100% Catholic Answers*

Christians are focused on the *biblical truths* that lead to an eternal salvation through faith in Jesus Christ. God’s Son, who was crucified upon a cross and raised from the dead for the world’s sins. This victory then, providing/proving Jesus Christ as the narrow way to everlasting life.

The Catholic focus is clearly expressed in their ministry slogans and purposes, whereas the biblical focus, is of course, found in the Scriptures.

## CATHOLIC MINISTRY SLOGANS AND PURPOSES

“CATHOLIC FROM THE GET-GO” —an advertisement.<sup>84</sup>

“Jimmy shows how, even in the first century after the Resurrection, it was necessary to defend and explain truths that are still under attack today; the Real Presence, the Perpetual Virginity of Mary, and others.

“Enlightening for anyone who wants to understand and defend the Full Truth of Catholicism, it shows clearly that the new, first-century Christian church was Catholic from the get-go. —Jimmy Akin, 3-CD Audio Set

“SIMPLYCATHOLIC.COM” —Purpose

“The mission ... is simple to help Catholics know and love the Lord and His *Church* ... equipped to share their *Catholic* faith with others. Simply Catholic ... has been sharing the Truth, Beauty and Goodness of *Catholicism* since OSV’s founding in 1912. (*emphasis added*)

“EWTN” —Slogan

“Live Truth, Live *Catholic*” (*emphasis added*)

“CATHOLICSComeHome.org” —Purpose

“Encountering Jesus through the Sacraments ... Discover the History, Beauty, Spirituality and Accomplishments of the *Catholic Church*, founded by Jesus Christ more than 2,000 years ago. We are *Catholic*.” (*emphasis added*)

“OSVnews.com” —Slogan

“For *Catholics* Who Love *Their Faith*” (*emphasis added*)

“OSV CATHOLIC BOOKSTORE” —Slogan

“Topics that help you Learn, Live, and Love the *Catholic Faith*.” (*emphasis added*)

“IGNATIUS PRESS” —Slogan

“Discover the Best of the *Catholic World*” (*emphasis added*)

“Discover His Church” —Slogan

“Know, Love, and Defend *your Catholic Faith!*” (*emphasis added*)

### **BIBLICAL FOCUS FOR TRUTH AND MINISTRY — JESUS CRUCIFIED!**

We Preach *NOT OURSELVES*. (2 Cor. 4:5)

We Preach *CHRIST CRUCIFIED*. (1 Cor. 1:23)

Therefore, seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; but have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; But by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man’s conscience in the sight of God.

But if our \*gospel, be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious \*gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. For *we preach not ourselves*, but Christ Jesus the Lord ... For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. (2 Cor. 4:1–6)

*We preach Christ Crucified ...* Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. (1 Cor. 1:23–24)

Jesus Christ crucified is also mentioned: (Matt. 26:2; 27:22, 23, 26, 35; 28:5; Mark 16:6; Luke 23:33; 24:7; John 19:41 and Acts 2:23, 36; 4:10)

Apostle Paul declares what should be the number one focus of all those who call themselves Christians.



For I determined not to know anything among you, save Jesus Christ, and him *crucified*. (1 Cor. 2:2)

But God forbid that I should glory, save in the *CROSS* of our Lord Jesus Christ. (Gal. 6:14)

The Catholic Deception and Focus Continues.

“Discover His Church”<sup>85</sup>

“Join Our Mission! Support the New Evangelization! Help us Share the Love of Christ!

“‘Discover His Church’ seeks to foster an intimate and personal relationship with Jesus Christ and remove obstacles that prevent our culture from seeing the true faith and teachings of the *one* Church that Jesus Christ established 2000 years ago!” —*Troy Guy*

Trying to sound more biblical and Christian-like, Catholics have been using language that Christians use.

Our Church “seeks to foster an intimate a personal relationship with Jesus Christ.”

On the surface this sounds great; this is a goal of every true Christian Church. A personal relationship with Jesus would involve the study of God’s Word, the knowledge of the Holy Spirit as the Christian’s helper and prayer partner, joint worship, and loving the brethren.

But as you read the remaining portion of the statement, you see that it involves the accepting and practicing of the teachings of the Catholic Church. This would involve the reception of the Sacraments, the celebration of the Mass, the eating and worshipping of the Eucharist, the encountering of Christ, not in the Scriptures, but in the consuming of Jesus’s body, blood, soul, and divinity.

As the Bible teaches—Christians preach Christ crucified, not Christ consumed.





*Chapter Eight*

## CATHOLIC SACRAMENTALS

**T**his chapter, with examples, scripture, and comments, deals with the sacramentals, which play an important role in the Catholic Church; they help the Catholic faithful see God at work.

**17. (Catholicism)**

**Sacramentals and Symbols: Their importance to the Life of the Church**

### SACRAMENTALS

*“Holy Mother Church has, moreover, instituted sacramentals. These are sacred signs ... of a spiritual nature ... obtained through the intercession of the Church” (CCC-1667). (emphasis added)*

*“For well-disposed members of the faithful, the liturgy of the sacraments and sacramental sanctifies almost every event of their lives with a divine grace which flows from the Paschal Mystery of the Passion, Death, and Resurrection of Christ. From this source all sacraments and sacramentals draw their power. There is scarcely any proper use of material things which cannot be thus directed toward the sanctification of men and the praise of God” (CCC-1670). (emphasis added)*

*“Catechesis must take, into account the forms of piety and popular devotions among the faithful ... the Church’s sacramental life, such as the veneration of relics, visits to sanctuaries, pilgrimages, processions ... the rosary, medals, etc.” {178 Cf. Council of Nicaea II: DS 601; 603; Council of Trent: DS 1822.} (CCC-1674). (emphasis added)*

**“Spiritual Weapons: The St. Benedict Medal”<sup>86</sup>**

**“In Scripture, St. Peter tells us to be sober and watchful because, ‘your adversary the devil prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking someone**

to devour’ (1 Peter 5:8). The devil is real, and he wants to destroy you ... through any means possible ... fight back with the spiritual weapons of prayer and faith.

*“One of the powerful weapons in spiritual combat is the St. Benedict medal. (emphasis added)*

“(On) The back ... are the letters C S S M L – N D S M D, (standing for) the Latin prayer (which means) The Holy Cross be my light; Let not the dragon be my guide ... I highly recommend you get one. It’s basic protection, like the bullet proof vest of sacramentals!” —*Sam Guzman, Catholic Exchange*

“Spiritual Weapons: The Red Scapular”<sup>87</sup>

Also called, the Scapular of the Passion it is considered “a source of spiritual protection.”

“Will prove to us a strong armor against infernal assaults, an impenetrable shield against the arrows of our spiritual enemies.” —**Sister Apolline**

“If you’ve never worn a scapular before, the red Scapular of the Passion is one option to consider. It’s a powerful weapon for your spiritual arsenal.”  
—*Sam Guzman, The Catholic Gentleman*

*Pastoral discernment is needed to sustain and support popular piety and, if necessary, to purify and correct the religious sense which underlies these devotions so that the faithful may advance in knowledge of the Mystery of Christ (CCC-1676). (emphasis added)*

*Sacramentals ... In accordance with bishops’ pastoral decisions, they can also respond to the needs, culture, and special history of the Christian people of a particular-region or time. They always include a prayer, often accompanied by a specific sign, such as the laying on of hands, the sign of the cross, or the sprinkling of holy water” (CCC-1668). (emphasis added)*

## SYMBOLS

The *Catholic Church* teaches that *Jesus wanted to leave believers “a visible-sacrifice (as the nature of man demands)”* (CCC-1366). (*emphasis added*)

“The Language of Symbols”<sup>88</sup>

“A symbol is something that stands for something else; it literally re-presents an idea to us in a different form so that we can take it in *more* fully and deeply ... It’s *vitally* important to teach *doctrine* and *Scripture*, *but* explaining something *only* once, or in just one way, *won’t* ensure that it will be understood, *let alone* that it will be meaningful and memorable. We need to have *ideas* presented to us in *multiple ways* in a *variety of modes* ... they express truth via *another* layer of teaching, which we can *absorb* on an emotional and aesthetic as well as an intellectual level; when we make *gestures* such as the sign of the cross, or lighting a candle, we are *speaking* symbolically and thus *enacting our faith on a physical level*. For that reason, the liturgy contains a *wealth* of symbolic details and action, and the interiors of churches are traditionally *rich* in symbols.” (*emphasis added*) —*Holly Ordway, Catholic Answers*

### 17. (Biblical)

**In the true biblical Church, there are no sacraments that visibly or otherwise dispense saving grace; hence, there is no need for sacramentals. Jesus did use symbols, and they have been written down in Scripture.**

Remember what Jesus told doubting Thomas:

*Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.* (John 20:29)

Remember what the goal of the signs were and why the Apostle John wrote them down.

And many other *signs* truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are *not* written in this book: But these are written, *that ye might believe* that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that *believing ye might have life through his name.* (John 20:30–31)

*Jesus used signs (miracles), symbols, illustrations, parables, and so forth, and the writers of the Gospels wrote them down. Jesus also explained to the disciples what the signs and parables meant, and the Holy Spirit guided and inspired them to write them down so we could understand everything we needed to know to believe and have life through his name.*

Jesus was able to teach in a way that his listeners could believe that he was the Christ and that faith in him would result in the reception of the gift of everlasting life. Phrases *everlasting life, eternal life, or life eternal* appear twenty-three times in the KJV New Testament. The Scriptures give many examples, explains it in different ways, and gives opportunities to the listeners to believe and receive the gift of everlasting life.

Jesus was concerned for those who saw the miracles and heard him speak but still did not believe.

Verily, Verily, I say unto thee, we, speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things? (John 3:11–12; see also Num. 21:5–9; Ps. 119:105, 130; Heb. 9:24; 1 Cor. 1:21)

The heavenly things, like the message of the cross.

At age seven, my salvation was not precipitated because of or helped by the things I could see; it was because of the Holy Spirit's conviction, God's Word, and my God-given free will. I used my free will to put my faith/belief in Jesus for the forgiveness of my sin and the reception of the gift of everlasting life. Immediately, I received the Holy Spirit's assurance, confirmation, sealing, and joy. My sins had been totally removed, I—was—going—to—heaven!

“At what age are children required to attend Mass?”<sup>89</sup>

“The *Code of Canon Law* says, ‘The faithful are obliged to participate in the Mass’ (1247), but it does not define the age” ... Canon 11 tells us, “Merely ecclesiastical laws bind those who have been baptized in the Catholic Church or received into it, possess the efficient use of reason, and, unless the law expressly provides otherwise, have completed seven years of age.” —*Trent Horn, Catholic Answers*

I thank and praise God that he reached me at an early age, seven, I wish only that I would have begun reading God’s Word as Timothy did.

That from a child thou hast known the *holy scriptures*, which are able, to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus—For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth and shall be turned unto fables. (2 Tim. 3:15; 4:3–4)





## Chapter Nine

# VENERATION OF RELICS

This chapter contains the symbols and definition of relics. You will also discover that the Eucharist is not only Christ's body, blood, soul, and divinity, but it may also become a relic. This happens when confirmed miracles concerning the Eucharist, give *sight* to the Catholic *faithful* convincing them that Christ is truly present. The importance of relics is also seen in the fact that *no Catholic building* could be consecrated without a *relic* in its presence.

### DEFINING THE TERMS—TRUTH AND FABLES

#### Truth<sup>90</sup>

From the Greek: “225 alethia: truth ... Usage: truth, but not merely truth as spoken; truth of idea, reality, sincerity, truth in the moral sphere, divine truth revealed to man, straightforwardness.” —*Strong's Concordance*.

#### Fable<sup>91</sup>

“A fictitious narrative or statement: such as—a legendary story of supernatural happenings” —*Merriam Webster*.

#### From the Greek<sup>92</sup>

“3454. Muthos—a *speech, story, i.e. a fable* ... Definition: a speech, story, a fable Usage: an idle tale, fable, fanciful story.” —*Strong's Concordance*

“HELPS Word-studies 3454 *mythos*—a myth; a false account yet posing to be the truth; *fabrication* (fable) which subverts (replaces) what is actually true.”

## Veneration<sup>93</sup>

Definition of *Veneration*:

1. “Respect or awe inspired by the dignity, wisdom, dedication, or talent of a person.
2. “The act of venerating.”

History and Etymology for *veneration*:

“Middle English *veneracioun*, borrowed from Anglo-French and Latin; Anglo-French *veneratiun*, borrowed from Latin *veneration-*, *veneratio* ‘act of soliciting the good will (of a deity), demonstration of respect or awe,’ from *venerari* ‘to solicit the good will of (a deity), hold in awe, VENERATE’ + *-tion-*, *-tio*, suffix of action nouns.”

“Quotes on the Most Blessed Sacrament” —using veneration, venerating.<sup>94</sup>  
“Eucharist: Sacrament to be Adored”

Pontiff John Paul II wrote a letter to Bishop Albert Houssiau of Liege, Belgium in regards to “the occasion of the 750th anniversary of the first celebration of the Feast of Corpus Christi” point three shares concerning the Eucharist that “Outside the Eucharistic celebration, the Church is careful to *venerate* the Blessed Sacrament, which must be ‘*reserved ... as the spiritual centre of the religious and parish community*’ (Paul VI, *Mysterium Fidei*, n. 68) ... whom we *adore ... adoration* in the Presence of the Blessed Sacrament unites the faithful ‘with the paschal mystery;’ *it enables them to share in Christ’s sacrifice, of which the Eucharist is the ‘permanent sacrament.’*” (*emphasis added*) —*The Real Presence*

We see *venerate* and *adore* used interchangeably in relation to the Eucharist, which is also worshiped upon the consecration of the Host. Do Catholics “worship” relics? They say no, but bowing, kneeling, and kissing out of reverence all look like acts of worship.

## RECENT EXAMPLE OF VENERATING RELICS

“Community prays”<sup>95</sup>

Relics of “St. Isidore, the patron saint of *Farming* and St. Gregory of Thaumaturgus ... patron saint against *flooding*” (*emphasis added*) were venerated. I counted approximately sixty attendees in the newspaper photo. Another photo showed Nun Barbara Ann Hoying *kissing the Relics*.  
—*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

## PAST EXAMPLES OF VENERATING RELICS

“St Peregrine prayer service at chapel”<sup>96</sup>

A “prayer service ... for anyone who has *cancer*.” The relic of Saint Peregrine was available to be *touched and held* during the service.  
(*emphasis added*) —*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

“Shrine schedules prayer service”<sup>97</sup>

“Many relics of Christ’s Passion are believed to have been found by *St. Helen (Helena), mother of Emperor Constantine in the late 320s*.” These, as well as other relics were brought to Maria Stein out of the collections of “Reverends Brunner and Gartner in the 1800’s.” The relics are small and include, “pieces of the *Last Supper Table, Veronica’s Veil, a Thorn* from the crown of thorns, *the Purple Mantle and the Burial Shroud*.” (*emphasis added*) —*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

## THE IMPORTANCE/PURPOSE FOR RELICS

“Shrine gains relic of Pope John Paul II”<sup>98</sup>

First-class relics are described as something “left over from the life of a saint” such as body parts from hair to an actual head.

Second-class relics may be something that a saint used.

Third-class relics are items that have touched a first or second-class relic.

The relic from the Pontiff were strands of his hair. The common disclaimer assures that relics should not be worshipped but only “honored and venerated.”



“Relics are *physical, tangible, concrete reminders that heaven is obtainable for us, (emphasis added)* so long as we recognize what made the saints holy and work to apply those qualities to our lives.” —*The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

## JESUS’S RESPONSE TO VENERATING RELICS

All things are delivered unto me of my Father ... Come unto me ... I will give you rest ... learn of me ... And ye shall find rest unto your souls. (Matt. 11:27–29)

“From St Peter’s bones to severed heads: Christian relics on display”<sup>99</sup>

Here are five of the top ten extant (def. *standing out, existing, not lost*) Christian relics:

The Head of St. Catherine of Siena, which is mummified and called the “grisliest relic” in the Catholic Church.

The Blood of Saint Januarius, in Naples Italy, a red, dried powder, “Every September—and on two other days in the year ... liquefies” thus becoming “Living Blood” and *protects the city from volcanoes, earthquakes and plagues. (emphasis added)*

A tongue, it is “*Said to have belonged to St. Anthony of Padua.*” It was found 750 years ago “perfectly preserved—an incorruptible relic.” Being a “great preacher,” his tongue must have been “holy.” *(emphasis added)*

The Relics of Sainte-Chapelle, “The French king, Louis IX ... Saint Louis” being “proud” of his relics, which included “Christ’s Crown of thorns,” built a church for them but they have found their way, so that today, they are in the cathedral of Notre Dame.

The Severed Head of St. John the Baptist was kept in Amiens Cathedral, built as a shrine. Today only a “replica” of his head is there; “the original was stolen in the 19th century.” —*Jonathan Jones, The Guardian*

“Why do we venerate relics” <sup>100</sup>

“The use of relics has some, although limited, basis in sacred Scripture” as seen during the lives of Elijah, Elisha, and Apostle Paul (2 Kings 2:9–14; 13:20–21; Acts 19:11–12). “Indeed, miracles were-connected-with these ‘relics’—not that some magical power existed in them, but just as God’s work was done through the lives of these holy men, so did His work continue after their deaths. Likewise [meaning: we can make a case for this because], just as people were drawn closer to God through the lives of these holy men, so did they (even if through their remains) inspire others to draw close even after their deaths. This perspective provides the Church’s understanding of relics.”

A history of the acceptance of opening-up the tombs of the so-called saints in 312 allowed Catholics to venerate their remains. Jerome warned not to worship or adore the relics but during the Middle Ages abuses began to grow with greedy individuals preying on ignorant people and their superstitions. Augustine “denounced imposters who dressed as monks selling spurious relics of saints.” Finally, Pontiff Gregory stopped the collecting of remains from the tombs and the selling of relics. However, Pontiffs and other Church authorities could not control “the translation of relics or prevent forgeries.” This negativity till this day continues to keep people “skeptical about relics.” The article ends on a positive note mentioning that the faithful can be reminded by the relics to be holy, cooperate with God’s work, ask for the prayers of the saints and to

“beg the grace of God to live” a “faith-filled” life, like the saints. —*Rev. William Saunders, Arlington Catholic Herald*

The Rev. Charles Mangan remarks/presents for CERC, the Catholic Education Resource Center, “Church Teaching on Relics” written by Rev. William Saunders. In closing Saunders reminds the faithful that:

“The relics of the saints and their veneration is just another in the long line of treasures which Jesus Christ has given to His chaste bride, the Church.”

“What are Relics and why are they Important?”<sup>101</sup>

“Relics are one more way that God demonstrates the fitness of the physical world to be a carrier of His grace and mercy.” —*Al Kresta, Legatus Magazine*

“**Eucharistic Quotes—Page 3**”<sup>102</sup>

“We discovered, like infants opening their eyes for the first time, that, God’s coming, upon earth out of love for us had radically changed the world, because *he had remained with us*. As we walked about the city, or traveled to different cities and countries, it was not the beautiful and interesting things around us that attracted us. *Not even Rome’s* wonderful monuments and *precious relics* seemed so important. (*emphasis added*) Rather, what gave sense of continuity to our journeying through the world for Jesus, was His Eucharistic presence in the tabernacles we found wherever we went.” —**Chiara Lubich**

“Peoples of the entire world need to hear these words. Their conscience needs to grow in certainty that Someone exists who holds in His Hands the destiny of this passing world... And this Someone is Love—Love that became Man, Love crucified and risen, Love unceasingly present among men. It is Eucharistic Love.” —**Pontiff John Paul II**

“Daily Catholic Mass – 2017 – 08 – 13 – Fr. Joseph” —from Carlo Acutis website.<sup>103</sup>

The Eucharist as a sacramental receives from some a very prominent role in their lives as the Church teaches that it should. But as we saw earlier, many Catholics do not share this enthusiasm. However, the following young boy does.

“The teen who dedicated his life to eucharistic miracles”<sup>104</sup>

A young Italian boy, Carlo Acutis, was born in 1991, lived only fifteen years, and during that time “developed a deep love for his faith” with daily Holy Communion, weekly confession, and praying the rosary. His great passion was to design, with his computer, an “exhibition of Eucharistic Miracles” that he worked on for close to three years. A parish in Thame of the UK is one of the first “to organize a display,” which may be requested for free at [www.carloacutis.com](http://www.carloacutis.com).

“Jesus is my great friend and the Eucharist my highway to Heaven,” —  
**Venerable Carlo Acutis**

Jesus, however, does not share this young boy’s enthusiasm.

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for *wide is the gate*, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in there-at: Because strait is the gate, and *narrow is the way*, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. (Matt. 7:13–14)

*Blessed* are they that have not seen and yet have believed. (John 20:29)

The spiritual blessings of faith far exceed those who need miracles or sightings to satisfy or confirm their belief.

“Catholic Diocese investigate ‘bleeding’ communion wafer being hailed as miracle by believers in Utah”<sup>105</sup>

This *so-called miracle* began during Mass at the St. Francis Xavier Church. A young parish attendee brought his consecrated communion wafer back to the priest “who then placed it in a glass of water” which follows church protocol, but on this day the host did not dissolve but



stayed intact and “began to turn blood red.” The Eucharist is no longer open to public display and has been taken by the Diocese of Salt Lake City. The Catholic diocesan administrator, Monsignor Colin F. Bircumshaw, has appointed an investigation, which will include people from “various backgrounds,” and results will be shared with the public. The Monsignor states “Whatever the outcome of the investigation, we can use this time to renew our faith and devotion in the *Greatest Miracle—The Real Presence of Jesus Christ* that takes place *at every Mass.*” Trickling blood from a host is the most commonly reported miracle. “The *most famous ‘miracle’*” took place at a Mass in the city of Bolesna, which is painted on the walls of the Vatican. The depiction shows a Host “*bleeding onto the tablecloth in the shape of a cross.*” An “*unusual Eucharistic miracle*” took place in the Lanciano monastery back in the eighth century and is a “*certified Eucharistic miracle.*” A monk “Claims that *the bread and wine literally changed into flesh and blood during a Mass.*” (*emphasis added*)—*Hannah Perry, Daily Mai*

### “Eucharistic Miracles”<sup>106</sup>

#### Faith in Christ’s Presence

Christ’s true presence in the wafer and the wine present some difficult doubts for Catholics. To help Catholics the Athenaeum Regina Apostolorum presented a conference on miracles involving the Eucharist. This they hoped would “help people comprehend the incomprehensible.” The exhibition focuses on “about 80 of the most important Eucharistic miracles.” They are displayed with “in-depth historical descriptions.”

*Siena, Italy—August 17, 1730,*

Consecrated wafers are “perfectly preserved for over 250 years.” Even “rigorous scientific experiments” could not explain this miracle.

*Blanot, France—March 31, 1331,*

A Eucharist Host had fallen from a woman’s mouth onto the “altar rail cloth” left a “spot of blood the same size” before the Priest was able to recover it.

*Bolsena-Orvieta, Italy,*

A priest was having a problem with “*believing in the Real Presence*” but when he pronounced the consecration on the Host blood began seeping out of it. This miracle led to Pontiff Urban IV commissioning “*the feast of Corpus Christi.*” This event is still being celebrated. (*emphasis added*) As recorded within this website the above three miracle descriptions were: Used by permission from *Eucharistic Miracles* by Joan Carroll Cruz © copyright 1987 TAN Books and Publishers, Inc.

Lanciano, Italy—Eighth Century AD,

During the celebration of the Mass a priest is doubting Jesus real presence in the Eucharist but when he consecrates the Host it is immediately transformed into “*flesh and blood*” and upon “*extensive scientific examination*” it is determined that this could only have been a miracle. The flesh was “*cardiac tissue*” and the blood type was AB “*as in all other approved Eucharistic miracles.*” (*emphasis added*)—*no authorship information given see more at, Zenit.org*

### **Eucharistic Truth—“The Eucharist and Sanctity”<sup>107</sup>**

What Do We Believe?

“The simplest way to express what Christ asks us to believe about the Real Presence is that the *Eucharist* is really *He ... the real Jesus ...* that the *Eucharist* began in the womb of the Virgin Mary; that the flesh ... received ... is the same flesh ... changed [into] bread at the Last Supper; that the blood received is the same blood into which He changed wine at the Last Supper. Had she not given Him His flesh and blood, there could not be a *Eucharist*.

“We are to believe that *the Eucharist is Jesus Christ—simply without qualification ...* in the fullness of His divine nature ... His human nature ... his body and soul ... everything that makes Jesus—Jesus. He is in the Eucharist with His hands and feet ... lips ... ears ... nostrils ... affections ... emotions and, with emphasis, *with His living, pulsating physical Sacred Heart.* That is what our Catholic Faith demands of us that we believe.

*If we believe this, we are Catholic. If we do not, we are not, (emphasis added) no matter what people may think we are.” —Priest John A. Hardon, S.J, CERC*

*The Eucharist: What do we believe?* A book published 10 July 2012, author Fainch Ryan. In the description, seen on CatholicIreland.net the book tries to answer questions for Catholic adults about the Eucharist.

“Catholics are a sacramental people. Our *rituals* are what bring us into contact with the God we believe in, and with the actions he has undertaken that we believe are for our salvation.” (emphasis added)

A doctorate in theology is held by Ryan from the University of St. Thomas Aquinas, Rome. She lectures concerning theology at Mater Dei, a college of Dublin City University.

**Eucharistic Processions**—“Corpus Christi procession fills the Streets of Buffalo’s East Side”<sup>108</sup>

The Monstrance, with the Eucharist was carried by Auxiliary Bishop Edward Grosz. The feast was jointly celebrated by Corpus Christi and Martyr Parishes. The procession went from one church to the next with a hundred people in attendance. Girls scattered flower petals, to welcome Jesus, with Bishop Grosz following under the canopy, creating a Holy place for the Eucharist. The Host for the Monstrance was brought back from Poland. In Poland the tradition, dates-back-to 1247 and in St. Stanistaus it has been carried out for at least 75 years. The processions in Poland are huge. It was drizzling when the procession began which the Bishop said was a reminder of their baptism “by which we become part of the Church” with the Holy Eucharist as the center. The Eucharist is essential for the Church and the Priesthood, without it neither would exist. Bishop Grosz stated that the “Priesthood, Church and Eucharist all together is what we celebrate now as we enter into this act of Divine Worship.” —*Patrick J. Buechi, Western New York Catholic*

“Quotes on the Holy Eucharist” <sup>109</sup>

“The Eucharist is connected with the Passion. If Jesus had not established the Eucharist, we would have forgotten the crucifixion. It would have faded into the past and we would have forgotten that Jesus loved us. There is a saying that to be far away from the eyes is to be far away from the heart. To make sure that we do not forget, Jesus gave us the Eucharist as a memorial of his love.” —*Blessed Teresa of Calcutta*

The following is an example of a Eucharistic procession, in my hometown, celebrated by the Holy Trinity Catholic Church.

“Prized Possession on Parade” <sup>110</sup>

“When you have a treasure—prized possession—you want everyone to see it ... The most prized treasure of the Catholic church will be taken to the streets ... Sunday.” The Archbishop from Cincinnati, Dennis Schunerr will “carry our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ under the appearance of a round, white piece of bread, and held in a golden vessel for all to see and adore.”



The reason for the procession is to let everyone know that “Jesus Christ is present in a very real way in the consecrated bread in every Catholic church in the world.”

It is stated that this Catholic belief is supported by Jesus’s words in the Gospel of Matthew 26:26 “This is my Body.” Rev. Stechschulte shares that these are the words repeated by the Priest “bringing Christ to us here today in his saving sacrifice” referred to as the Mass or Eucharist.

He also correctly declares that the Eucharist is “The center of Catholic life and worship.” He writes that “it sounds mysterious, possibly strange” that Jesus could be present with us in the “Blessed Sacrament;” then with emphasis he declares, “But it is true.”

He compares his faith in the Bible with the same faith he has in “Christ’s presence in the Blessed Sacrament.” This Sacramental “treasure” is something they do not want to keep hidden. He believes this historical procession should be “revived today.”

The Reverend invited everyone to come, watch and see that, “Christ is truly with us ... in the Blessed Sacrament and we are taking him to the streets.” —*Reverend Barry Stechschulte, Coldwater cluster*

“Corpus Christi Procession 2014” <sup>111</sup>

“I want the Church to go out into the streets.” —**Pontiff Francis**

“They followed Bishop John Noonan holding a monstrance with the body of Christ through downtown Orlando, singing and praying, more than 1,000 Catholics from the diocese gave witness to their love and devotion to the real presence of Jesus Christ during the annual Corpus Christi procession June 22.” —*Orlando Diocese*

“Quotes on the Most Blessed Sacrament” <sup>112</sup>

“Christ held Himself in His hands when He gave His Body to His disciples saying: ‘This is My Body.’ No one partakes of this Flesh before he Adored it.” —**St. Augustine**

“Recognize in this *bread* what hung on the cross, and in this chalice, what flowed from His side ...” —**St. Augustine**, Sermon 3, 2; circa A.D. 410 {original translation}

“What wonderful majesty! ... That the Lord of the whole universe, God, and the Son of God, should humble Himself like this under the form of a Little Bread, *for our salvation.*” (*emphasis added*) —**St. Francis of Assisi**

“I hunger for the bread of God, *the flesh of Jesus Christ*—I long to drink of his blood, the gift of unending love.” (*emphasis added*) —**St. Ignatius of Antioch**

“Jesus taught a *new sacrifice* which the Church received from the Apostles and offers throughout the whole world.” (*emphasis added*) — **St. Irenaeus** (d. 202)

“How many of you say: I should like to see His face, His garments, His shoes. You do *see* Him, you *touch* Him, you *eat* Him. He gives Himself to you, not only that you may see Him, but also to be your *food and nourishment.*” (*emphasis added*) —**St. John Chrysostom**

The Eucharist is the Heart of the Church (6/1997). At the close of the Eucharistic Congress in Wroclaw:

“Behold, Christ came into the world to bestow upon man divine life—In order to *gain eternal life* man needs the *Eucharist* ... By consuming the Body and Blood of Christ, man bears within himself, already on this earth, *the seed of Eternal Life* ... *the Eucharist is the Sacrament of Life in God.*” (*emphasis added*) —**Pontiff John Paul II**

“*My Jesus!* What a lovable contrivance this Holy Sacrament was—that You would hide under the appearance of bread to make Yourself loved.” (*emphasis added*) —**St. Alphonsus Legouri**

“When you look at the *Crucifix*, you understand how much Jesus loved you *Then*. When you look at the *Sacred Host* you understand how much Jesus loves you *Now.*” (*emphasis added*) —**Blessed Mother Teresa of Calcutta**

“The *surest, easiest, shortest way is the Eucharist.*” (*emphasis added*) —**Pontiff St. Pius X**

“The Eucharist is everything, because from the Eucharist, everything is.” —**St. Peter Julian Eymard**

“The Year 2000 will be intensely *Eucharistic*: in the Sacrament of the *Eucharist* the Savior, who took flesh in Mary’s womb twenty centuries ago, *continues to offer Himself ... as the source of Divine Life.*” (emphasis added) —**Pontiff John Paul II**, Tertio Millennio Adveniente—Year 2000

“*The Renovation of the World will be brought about only by the Holy Eucharist.*” (emphasis added) —**Pontiff Leo XIII**

Catholicism’s goal is a worldly goal “the renovation of the world” while the biblical goal is the new birth of an individual’s soul, for the new heaven and the new earth. The apostles Paul and Peter both share that this world is not the believer’s home:

For here have we no continuing city, (such as the Vatican) but we seek one to, come (the New Jerusalem). (And what sacrifices do the priesthood of believers perform, in regards, to sin? none.) By him (Jesus) therefore let us offer the *sacrifice of praise* to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name. (Heb. 13:14–15)

But ye are ... a royal priesthood ... that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God ... as strangers and pilgrims. (1 Pet. 2:9–11)

*Jesus used a physical metaphor*, eating his flesh and drinking his blood, to test his disciples to see if they truly understood what he was teaching and requiring of them.

The meat we are to eat is not the Eucharist but the *meat* of committing to doing the will of the Father and carrying on the task of preaching the gospel, planting and sowing the seed of God’s Word that he may reap souls for his kingdom.

Jesus saith unto them, *my meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.* Say, not ye, There, are four months, and then cometh harvest? Behold, I say unto you, Lift, up your eyes and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest ... And *many* of the Samaritans of that city *believed* on him for the saying of the woman ... And *many more*

*believed* because of his own word; And said unto the woman, Now, we *believe*, not because of thy saying: *for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.* (John 4:34–35, 39, 41–42)





## Chapter Ten

# CATHOLICISM'S VIRGIN MARY

**W**e are now going to transition from the Eucharist to the Blessed Virgin Mary and Archbishop Sheen had the most appropriate quote and Jon Bosco the most glorious dream.

“The mark of the Christian is the willingness to look for the Divine in the flesh of a babe in a crib, the continuing Christ under the appearance of bread on an altar, and *a meditation and a prayer on a string of beads.*” (*emphasis added*) —**Archbishop Fulton J. Sheen**

*Forty Dreams of St. John Bosco* — “The Twin Pillars of Victory”<sup>113</sup>

Bosco dreamed of two pillars, the Eucharist and Mary. A painting of this dream hangs in Turin, Italy, in the church, Basilica Maria Ausiliatrice. This dream was in May of 1862 and is titled, “The Twin Pillars of Victory.”

Bosco describes the scene as a sea of ships trying to destroy a much larger ship (the Church) when during the battle, “two mighty columns of great height arise ... On the top of one ... the statue of the Immaculate Virgin ... ‘*Help of Christians;*’ on the other ... much higher and bigger, stands a Host ... ‘*Salvation of the Faithful.*’

As the battle rages the Pontiff guides the ship between the two columns and anchors the ship to the columns. The bow is chained to the Host column and the stern is chained to the Immaculate Virgin column.

Bosco interpreted the dream: The ships are enemies which bring persecutions, serious trials and are trying to sink the ship/Church. “Only two means are left to save her amidst so much confusion: *DEVOTION TO MARY MOST HOLY* and *FREQUENT COMMUNION*, making use of every means and doing our best to practice them and having them practiced everywhere and by everybody.” (*emphasis added*)—*Priest J. Bacchiarello, S.D.B.*



In this chapter, all things Mary are laid out and compared with the Scriptures. Catholics do not use many scriptural truths in their teachings about Mary. Truths about the Blessed “Ever” Virgin Mary come from the source equal with the scriptures called *Tradition*, Church Tradition. Marian apparitions are also important and well respected in the Catholic Church.

*This is the Most Complete List of Marian Apparitions—* the book received a Whopping 4.6 million likes! <sup>114</sup>

“She suffered a sword piercing her heart as she watched her son’s Passion and Death ... Our Blessed Mother comes to us when we need her most, with a message and guidance specific to the

problems and suffering at hand. Here is a list of 40 beautiful stories of Marian apparitions in countries all over the world to inspire you and remind you of the eternal compassion and counsel which she unceasingly offers to us.” —*Jeannie Ewing, Cora Evans blog*



Titles of Mary include The Gate of Heaven, Co-redemptrix, Mother of Perpetual Help, Our Lady of the Rosary, Queen of Heaven, Queen of the Most Holy Rosary, Refuge of Sinners, Seat of Wisdom, Spouse of the Holy Spirit, Our Lady of Fatima, and in 1951 Pontiff Pius XII before a crowd of over

one million declared that he had in 1946 “Crowned Our Lady of Fatima as *Queen of the World*.”

This is an amazing statement, since Satan is called “*the god of this world*”

But if our \**gospel* be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: in whom *the god of this world* hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious \**gospel* of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Cor. 4:3–4)

What Jesus has done for this world, as the True God and True Man, is hidden or obstructed behind Catholicism’s teachings, especially those pertaining to Mary and the Eucharist. This is seen in the following article.

“The Dads of Saints: Two Fathers Who Raised Holy Men”<sup>115</sup>

The fatherly devotion of John Paul’s and Padre Pio’s fathers included *the Mass* and *the Rosary*.

Pio’s father Orazio was “A simple and joyful man ... *devoted to the Mass and Rosary*.” He did not learn to read but told scripture stories to his children from what he memorized from the Scripture. In his old age when the pilgrims would come to see his son and compliment him for being Padre’s father it is said that he replied, “‘I didn’t make him. Jesus Christ did.’ At the end of his life, though, it seems he was ready to claim a little credit.” Just before Orazio died, his granddaughter shares, he said “I’m going to call the angels and tell them to *take me to heaven, because I can say, ‘I’m Padre Pio’s father.’*”

Pontiff John Paul II’s father “was recognized as a man of character, integrity and justice ... leading his young son Karol ... in a daily routine punctuated by regular prayer ... reading the Bible, *reciting the Rosary, and attending daily Mass*.” His father would teach him “Polish history—but the most meaningful lessons were those of interior conversion, resignation to the will of God and *redemptive suffering*.” (*emphasis added*) —*Claire Dwyer, National Catholic Register*

“Titles of the Blessed Virgin Mary”—CatholicSaints.Info

The Mary of Catholicism has many titles; total titles from A–W, 371. The last title, the “Workshop of the Incarnation” just beating out, “Woman Clothed with the Sun.” The letter, O, topped the list with 116 titles, of which 115 of them started with the word “Our.” Mary’s first alphabetically ordered title is Adam’s Deliverance. <https://catholicsaints.info/titles-of-the-blessed-virgin-mary/>.

In all of Mary’s titles none of them is *love*. That name is reserved for God, as the scriptures proclaim. (1 John 4:7, 8, 16; 2 Cor. 13:11)

God, being rich in mercy, because of the great *love* with which he loved us ... hath quickened us together with *Christ* ... And hath raised us up together and made us sit together in heavenly places in *Christ Jesus*. (Eph. 2:4–6).

## BECAUSE GOD IS LOVE

God said, Let, *us* make man in our image, after our likeness ... so *God created man in his own image*, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them. (Gen. 1:26–28)

Since God is love, he has the attributes of a loving father, mother, son, daughter, friend, uncle, aunt, cousin, co-worker, neighbor, teacher, employer, employee, and so forth. So, God may manifest the love of a mother. He is the one who created motherhood.

**Here is a prayer to Mary, Our Lady of Mount Carmel. She is noted for starting the devotion concerning the wearing of the brown scapular.**

“O Beautiful Flower of Carmel, most fruitful vine, splendor of heaven, holy and singular, who brought forth the Son of God, still ever remaining a pure virgin, assist us in our necessity. Star of the Sea, help and protect us. Show us that you are our Mother. Amen.”

**Here is my reconstruction of the above prayer put together in honor of Jesus.**

O Beautiful Savior of Mt. Calvary, the most fruitful and only vine, the obedient Son of God, the servant of our salvation. Ever sinless and knocking at our door, the day Star that arises in our believing heart, be our light to replace the darkness. The victorious and resurrected King, the Lamb of God! Jesus, by faith I am seated in thee! Jesus the Almighty Amen!

There are many Catholic ministries or organizations that advance the extolling of the, so called, Blessed Virgin Mary. With their combined comments Mary is credited with doing and being if not all, just about all that Jesus is and has done except for his dying for our sins and being resurrected from the dead. Satan is busy with his business, of getting your eyes off, of Jesus. Here are scriptures to show that God the Father and Jesus do the same and more, than what is ascribed by the prayer to Our Lady of Mount Carmel.

**1. “O Beautiful Flower of Carmel”**

All, of our prayers, praise and proclamations should be about and go to God.

*O Sing unto the Lord ... bless his name; shew forth his salvation ... declare his glory ... his wonders among all people. For the LORD is great, and greatly to be praised.*

*I will praise thee ... my God, with all my heart: ... I will glorify thy name for evermore. (Ps. 96:1–4; 86:12)*



Is there a human being, who is a creation of God, worthy of praise and glory?

Not unto us, O LORD, not unto us, but unto thy name give glory, for thy mercy, and for thy truth's sake.

O GOD ... my lips shall praise thee. (Ps. 115:1; 63:1, 3; see also 2 Cor. 4:14–15)

“Step Two: Victory Sings the Redeeming Works of God.”<sup>116</sup>

“The first recorded song in the bible (Exodus 15) is the song of Moses, when God freed the Israelites, from Egypt. The last song is this one, the song of the Lamb.

“When Paul and Silas were thrown into the Philippian jail, they sang and praised God ... Celebrate the Lord Jesus! Praising God precedes and follows every victory.” —Adrian Rodgers, *Love Worth Finding*

## 2. “Most Fruitful Vine”

Is Mary taking the place of Jesus for those who follow her?

*I am the true vine ... now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you ... I am the vine ... without me ye can do nothing ... If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so, shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father’s commandments and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that MY JOY might remain in you, and that YOUR JOY MIGHT BE FULL. This is my Commandment, that, ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man*



*lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you ... I call you not servants ... I have called you friends; For all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. (John 15:1, 3–5, 7–15)*

### 3. “Splendor of Heaven”

*David blessed the LORD before all the congregation: ... Blessed be thou, LORD God ... for ever and ever ... the greatness ... the power ... the glory ... the victory ... the majesty: ... all that is ... is thine ... thou art exalted ... above all ... thou reignest over all ... Now therefore ... we thank thee and praise thy glorious name.” (1 Chron. 29:10–13)*

Daniel records Nebuchadnezzar’s praise for God after his abasement by the Lord as the king of Babylon.

I Nebuchadnezzar ... I blessed ... I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever ... Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven ... those that walk, in pride he is, able to abase. (Dan. 4:34–35, 37)

Now remember these Marian apparitions could very well be Satan who “is transformed into an angel of light” (2 Cor. 11:14). How can we know? Do they line up with scripture, and do they glorify God the Father and or Jesus Christ? Or, do they mimic Jesus, taking on names or attributes that Jesus or God the Father already have?



### 4. “Holy and Singular”

*He which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy ... because it is written, Be, holy; for I am holy.” (1 Pet. 1:15–16)*

Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for *thou only art holy*: for all nations shall come and worship before thee ... After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; And cried with a loud voice, saying, *Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.*



And all *the angels* stood, round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts, and *fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God*, saying, *Amen: Blessing ... glory ... wisdom ... thanksgiving ... honour ... power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.* (Rev. 15:4; 7:9–12)

Mary said, *My, soul doth magnify the Lord ... For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy is his name. And his mercy is on them that fear him.*” (Luke 1:46, 49–50)

## 5. “Who Brought Forth the Son of God”

The scriptures say that Mary would bring forth a son. That this son would be the Son of God. He was to be her firstborn son. Nowhere, does it say that Mary would be the mother of God. God is eternal, and he has always existed.

Behold, the angel of the LORD appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that, which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And *she shall bring forth a son*, and thou shalt call his name *Jesus*: For he shall *save* his people from their *sins*. (Matt. 1:20–21)

And she brought forth her *firstborn son*, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn. (Luke 2:7)

But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, *made of a woman, made under the law*, To, redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. (Gal. 4:4–5)

And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name *JESUS* ... The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore, also

that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the *Son of God* ... *And Mary said, My, soul doth magnify the Lord, and, my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.* (Luke 1:30–31, 35, 46–47; see also Mark 3:33–35)

## 6. “Still Ever Remaining a Pure Virgin”

Then came to him his mother and his brethren and could not come at him for the press. And it was, told him by certain which said, Thy, mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee. And he answered and said unto them, My, mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God and do it. (Luke 8:19–21)

## 7. “Assist Us in Our Necessity”

Our greatest necessity, being, the cleansing away of our sin.

Paul, an apostle of *Jesus Christ* by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is *our hope* ... For there is *one God*, and *one mediator* between God and men, *the man Christ Jesus.*” (1 Tim. 1:1; 2:5)

We are ... *unclean* ... our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. (Isa. 64:6; see also Luke 24:44–47; 24:25–27; 9:22)

Since Jesus wanted the necessity of his message preached to all nations, I checked the internet for how many nations the Blessed Virgin Mary was credited with appearing in and found this:

“Welcome to the Lady of All Nations Website of the Family of Mary”<sup>117</sup>

On March 25, 1945, Our Lady appeared in Amsterdam to Ida Peerdeman (deceased 1996). On May 31, 2002, the current Bishop of Amsterdam, Jozef M. Punt, made a written statement regarding the authenticity of the apparitions of Mary as the Lady of All Nations

*“In light and virtue of all these recommendations, testimonies and developments, and in pondering all this in prayer and theological reflection, I have come to the conclusion, that the apparitions of the Lady of All Nations in Amsterdam consist of a supernatural origin.” (emphasis added)*

Our Lady appears under a new title, “The Lady of All Nations” or “The Mother of All Nations.” In this time, she wants to be made known and loved by everyone under this title.

Mary gradually reveals a plan with which God wants to save the world and prepare it for a new outpouring of the Holy Spirit. Accordingly, she gives all peoples and nations an image and a prayer.

In the image, Mary appears in a white dress with a gold cloth belt, which represents “the *Loincloth* of the Son. For I stand as the Lady before the Cross of the Son.” Her feet stand on top of a globe of the earth, under the globe are waves of sheep, which represent “all the nations and races of the earth.” Mary states this signifies her endorsement from the Father and the Son of their acceptance to bring her “into the world as Co-redemptrix, Mediatrix and Advocate (May 31, 1951).”

The prayer reads, “Lord Jesus Christ, Son of the Father, send now your spirit over the earth. Let the Holy Spirit live in the hearts of all nations, that they may be preserved from degeneration, disaster, and war. May the Lady of All nations, *The Blessed Virgin Mary*, be our Advocate. Amen.”

One condition for approval was the insertion of the title “*The Blessed Virgin Mary*.” A significant aspect of this is found in the Catechism of the Catholic Church, paragraph (CCC-411) that mentions Jesus as the “new Adam” and Mary, Jesus mother, is referred to as the “new Eve” thus making her Co-Jesus or in theological terms Co-redemptrix.

Finally, on the Home Page we read:

“The title Mother and Lady of All Nations ‘Under this title she will save the World.’ (March 20, 1945)” <sup>118</sup>

It appears that the first outpouring of the Holy Spirit and the message of Jesus Christ is now obsolete.

Remember: Jesus is our focus and our message is the Cross.

And as Moses lifted, up the serpent ... *even so must the Son of man be lifted up* ... this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.” (John 3:14, 19)

“Unbelief, LWF Devotional” <sup>119</sup>

“Individuals don’t go to hell because of sins such as lying, stealing, or cheating but because of unbelief.

Unbelief is the major sin—the ... sin out of which all other sins grow. It is the one sin that will damn you to hell.

Can you think of any sin greater than to point the finger of unbelief at God and say, ‘You lie!’ There is no greater sin than to aim the gun of unbelief at the Christ on the cross and refuse to receive Him.” —*Adrian Rodgers, Love Worth Finding*

There may also be those out there who know it is true, but they will not surrender to serve Christ. They would rather remain in their sin and suffer the consequences with the brotherhood and sisterhood of unrepentant sinners, which is not a good idea.

*Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God ... I shew you a mystery ... we shall all be changed ... put on incorruption ... put on immortality ... death is swallowed up in victory ... God ... giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore ... be ye ... abounding in the work of the Lord ... your labour is not in vain in the Lord. (1 Cor. 15:50–58)*

## 8. “Star of The Sea”

*I Jesus ... I am ... the bright and morning star.* (Rev. 22:16)

A *star* out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel. (Num. 24:17)

We have also a more, sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and *the day star* arise in your hearts. (2 Pet. 1:19)

*Jesus ... I am the light of the world.* (John 8:12; see also Isaiah 9:2)

## 9. “Help and Protect Us”

God helps and protects us.

Unto Adam also and to his wife *did the LORD God make coats of skins and clothed them.* (Gen. 3:21)

And they came to wake him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then *he arose and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was calm. and he said ... Where is your faith?* And they, being afraid wondered, saying one to another, what, manner of man is this! For he, commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him. (Luke 8:24–25; see also Matt. 14:24–31)

Then king Darius wrote unto all people ... Peace be multiplied unto you. I make a decree, that in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble and fear before the God of Daniel: for he is the living God, and stedfast for ever, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed, and his dominion shall be even unto the end. *He delivereth and rescueth*, and he worketh signs and wonders in heaven and in earth, Who, hath delivered Daniel from the power of the lions. (Dan. 6:25–27)

*Our God whom we serve is, able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thy hand, O king. But if not, be it*

known unto thee, O king, that *we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image* which thou hast set up. Then was Nebuchadnezzar full of fury ... Then *Nebuchadnezzar the King* was astonished ... and said, *Lo, I see four men* loose, walking in, the midst of the fire, and *they have no, hurt and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God*. Then Nebuchadnezzar ... said ... *come forth* ... Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, came forth ... *Then Nebuchadnezzar ... said, blessed be the God* of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who hath sent his angel, and delivered his servants that trusted in him, and have changed the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they might not serve nor worship any god, except their own God. (Dan. 3:17–19, 24–26, 28)

## 10. “Show Us That You Are Our Mother”

Jesus gives no special favor to his mother spiritually. In fact, Jesus says that whoever does God's will is his mother.

*Whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.* (Mark 3:35)

*Blessed, is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.* But he (Jesus) said, *Yea, rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.* (Luke 11:27–28)

God knows how and does love like a mother.

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, *as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!*” (Luke 13:34; see also Ps. 17:6–8)

For the LORD'S portion is his people; Jacob ... As an eagle stirreth up *her* nest, fluttereth over *her* young, spreadeth abroad *her* wings, taketh

them, beareth them on *her* wings: *So, the Lord alone did lead* him, and there was no strange god with him. (Deut. 32:9, 11–12)

## 11. “Amen”

Amen, is defined as, “So be it” and “surely” and are signs of agreement. Check out closely the finality of God’s blessedness.

*Blessed* be the Lord God of Israel *for ever and ever*. And all the people said, *Amen*, and praised the LORD. (1 Chron. 16:36)

*Blessed* be the Lord God, the God of Israel, Who *only* doeth wondrous things. And *blessed* be his glorious name *for ever*: and let the whole earth be filled with his Glory; *Amen, and Amen*. (Ps. 72:18–19; see also Rev. 3:14; 2 Cor. 1:20)

## SOME CLOSING REMARKS

Jesus, as a minister of God, completed everything God the Father promised and planned for the world’s redemption. Through faith in Jesus’s shed blood, we have peace with God. To Jesus be glory for ever.

Now I say that *Jesus Christ was a minister* of the circumcision *for the truth of God, to confirm the promises* made unto the fathers. (Rom. 15:8–9)

O the depth of the riches both, of the wisdom and knowledge of *God!* How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! ... *For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things*: to Whom be glory for ever. Amen. (Rom. 11:33, 36)

Our Lord *Jesus, that great shepherd* of the sheep, through the *blood* of the everlasting covenant, *make you perfect* in every good work to *do his will* ... to whom be glory for ever and ever. *Amen*. (Heb. 13:20–21)

## Chapter Eleven

# FATIMA/BEACON OF HOPE

**T**he supposed apparition of the Blessed Virgin Mary in Fatima Portugal is a major event and celebration of the Catholic faithful especially outside of the United States.

This year on March 25, 2020— “At Fatima, 24 countries consecrated to Jesus and Mary amid the coronavirus pandemic.”

The twenty-four countries included Albania, Bolivia, Colombia, Costa Rica, Cuba, Dominican Republic, Guatemala, Hungary, India, Kenya, Mexico, Moldova, Nicaragua, Panama, Paraguay, Peru, Poland, Portugal, Romania, Slovakia, Spain, Tanzania, Timor (East), and Zimbabwe. — *CNA Daily News*

### THE INTERNATIONAL PILGRIM VIRGIN STATUE

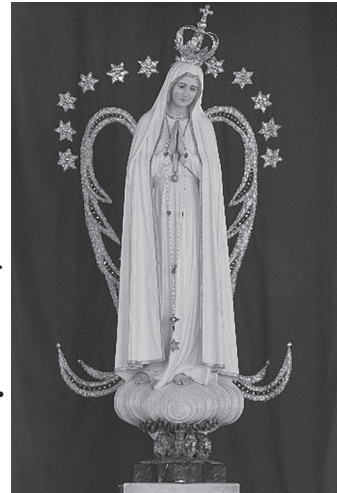
“Excitement Builds: Our Lady of Fatima Tours America”<sup>120</sup>

“An epic journey. A critical message that must be spread. The Fatima Centennial U.S. Tour for Peace. (video 1:14 min.)

“Fatima is more important now than in 1917.” —**St. John Paul II**

“The Fatima Tour for Peace”

“The purpose of the Pilgrim Virgin Statue tours was and still is to bring the graces of Fatima and Our Lady’s message of hope, peace and salvation





to those many millions of people who may never have an opportunity to make a pilgrimage to Fatima itself. —*Patrick Sabat, Program Director*

“In 1946, I crowned Our Lady of Fatima as Queen of the World.”  
— **Pontiff Pius XII**

World Apostolate of Fatima, USA, Our Lady’s Blue Army

“The apostolate is the only Fatima organization in the world which speaks the name of the Church’ and ‘with the authority of the Church’ on Fatima.

“Our mission is to help people learn, live and spread the message of Our Lady of Fatima in communion with the Church and in concert with The New Evangelization. [www.bluearmy.com](http://www.bluearmy.com).”

“The Message of Fatima” <sup>121</sup>

“Do not be afraid. I am from Heaven.

“...God wishes to establish in the world devotion to my Immaculate Heart. If what I say to you is done, many souls will be saved and there will be peace [world peace].”



“If we heed our Lady’s call to personal holiness, prayer, and reparations for sin, we will see the blessings promised at Fatima poured out abundantly on us! — ‘Learn the message of Fatima! Live the message of Fatima! Spread the message of Fatima!’” —*Patrick Sabat, Program Director*

“7 Powerful Messages from Our Lady of Fatima:  
‘The Grace of God Will be Your Comfort’”

“May 13 is the feast of Our Lady of Fatima.

“Our Lady of Fatima appeared six times to the three shepherd children (Lucia, Jacinta and Francisco) from May 13, 1917—Oct. 13, 1917.

“3) ‘[Jesus] wishes to establish devotion to my Immaculate Heart in the world. *I promise salvation* to those who embrace it; and these souls will be beloved of God like flowers arranged by me to adorn His throne.’  
(*emphasis added*)

“4) ‘Pray the rosary every day in honor of Our Lady of the Rosary, in order to obtain peace for the world and the end of the war, for *she alone can be of any avail.*’ (*emphasis added*)

“5) ‘*Sacrifice yourselves for sinners* and say many times, especially when you make a sacrifice, ‘O Jesus, this is for love of Thee, for the conversion of sinners, and in reparation *for the sins committed against the Immaculate Heart of Mary.*’ (*emphasis added*)

“6) ‘Pray, pray much, and sacrifice for sinners, for many souls go to hell because *there is no one to sacrifice and pray for them.*’” (*emphasis added*)  
— ChurchPOP Editor

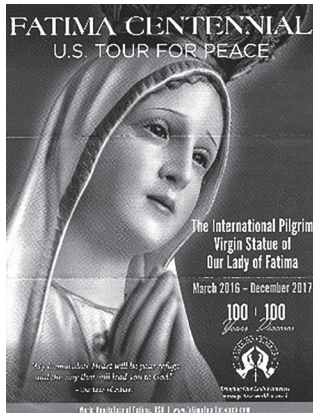
Am I the only one that can hear the Devil’s voice mocking Jesus in the above and other Marian quotes?

**“Jesus wants to use you to make me known and loved. He wants to establish in the world devotion to my Immaculate Heart. To those who accept this, I promise them the salvation of their souls and they will be loved by God like flowers placed by me to adorn His throne.”**

(June 13, 1917 – Our Lady to Lucia, one of the shepherd children who entered Religious life)

*The World Apostolate of Fatima is a Public Association of the Faithful under the Pontifical Council for the Laity – the official voice of the Vatican on the Message of Fatima.*

“My Immaculate Heart will be Your Refuge—Our Lady of Knock”—Ireland,  
“Jesus came to us through his mother he desires that we come to him  
through the same mother.” Through, the work of the Holy Ghost, “Mary  
molds and fashions us into the likeness of Christ.” —*Priest quotes during  
offertory message, minute 9–10*



“*My Immaculate Heart will be your refuge and the way that will lead you to God.*’ —**Our Lady of Fatima.**”

“Living this consecration as parishioners means becoming an apostle of Mary, striving to imitate her virtues, and to place in her hands the offerings of our little sacrifices of reparation for the salvation of souls, so that we might be strengthened and aided by her in order to face

the attacks of the Evil One, and hasten the day of the triumph of her Immaculate Heart.

“To everyone who makes that consecration and *sincerely tries to live it*, the words of Our Lady—*I will never leave you; my Immaculate Heart will be your refuge, and the way that will lead you to God. (emphasis added)*

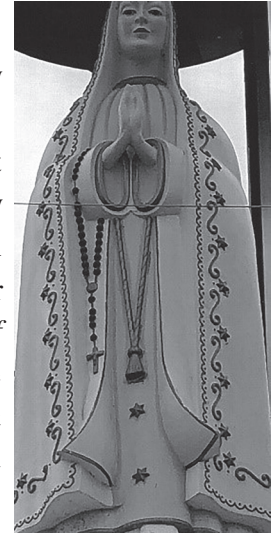
“For more please visit <http://www.reginaprophetarum.org> & remember to say 3 Hail Marys for the priest.” —*Sensus Fidelium*

The phrase Mary supposedly used “I will never leave you” was used by God in Deut. 31:6, 8; Josh. 1:5; Isa. 41:10, by God’s Son Jesus in Matt. 28:20 “And, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world” and shared by Paul in Heb. 13:5 “For he (God) hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.”

If Satan/Lucifer wants to exalt himself and deceive what better way could he achieve this than by calling himself a Co-this and a Co-that with phrases and statements that belong to God.

“Our Lady of Fatima”<sup>122</sup> —Russells Point, OH

From Lima Ohio we learn in the “Lima News” that Our Lady of Fatima Shrine, Indian Lake—Russell’s Point—Ohio, was built in 1964. The 19’6” statue was sculpted and then cast out of fiberglass in Florida, with work beginning in February 1963. George B. Quatman with a *specific goal* in mind built the statue of the Blessed Virgin on this site—to honor Mary’s apparition at Fatima and “*to improve the morals of society.*” He was quoted at the original dedication in June 1964 saying, “*If this monument will stop just one person from using profanity, it will be worth all the effort that has been expended on it. Profanity is an insult to God.*”



Catholic Telegraph, August 14, 2018— “A picture says a thousand words: Our Lady of Fatima Shrine Russells Point Ohio.”

The Catholic Telegraph photographer, Greg Hartman gives us a view of the shrine while “On Saturday August 11, Bishop Joseph Binzer said Mass at the Our Lady of Fatima Shrine in Russels Point on the shore of Indian Lake.”

A Sunday Bulletin from the Coldwater Cluster of Parishes, June 23, 2019— “The Most Holy Body and Blood of Christ” (Earlier a portion from the bulletin concerning the Eucharist appeared between (CCC–1410 and CCC–1413).

Watch for the “*Christian-ese*” that is being used.

“Help \_\_\_\_\_ *Spread the Gospel!*”

As you read in the title of the bulletin, the gospel of the Catholic Church is the Eucharist/Mass, the unbloody, representation of the sacrifice of the Cross.

“From Mercer County to a Mission trip in Russia. God called me out of my comfort zone ... I have taken ownership of my faith.

“I would greatly appreciate prayers for our safety and especially, to Our Lady of Fatima for the radical conversion of Russia. Along with this, any financial help.”

Committed Catholics are being trained to sound more like biblical Christians however, their teachings and goals remain the same, bring all people into the fold of the One True Church, bring them home to Catholicism, the Eucharist and Mary.

### **JESUS TRAVELED THROUGH SAMARIA TO ACCOMPLISH HIS FATHER’S MISSION.**

Jesus traveled through Samaria and there met a woman at Jacobs well. Jesus spoke to her concerning worshipping God the Father and says that it will be “Neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem” but the hour will come “And now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.” [God the Father is not an old man with a white beard.]

The woman, says, that she knows the Christ is coming and that he would tell us all things. Then Jesus tells her “I that speak unto thee am he.” The disciples who had just come, marveled that Jesus had talked with the woman. The woman left and went into the city telling the men “Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?” The disciples encouraged Jesus to eat “But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of ... *my, meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.*” (John 4:4–34)

Remember, the same holds true for Jesus’s followers; their “meat” is to do the will of Jesus who sent them and to finish his work, to labor to bring in souls for God’s kingdom.

**Mary’s fifteen promises for those who pray the rosary and *serve* her, compared with God the Father and Jesus fifteen promises for those who obey and *serve* them.**

1. Mary/Rosary Promise

“Whoever shall faithfully *serve* me by recitation of the rosary, *shall receive signal graces.* (emphasis added)

1. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

The elders ... I exhort ... feed the flock of God ... taking the oversight ... willingly; *not* for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; *neither* as being lords over God’s heritage but *being examples* to the flock. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye *shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.* (1 Pet. 5:1–4)

The devil said unto him ... If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered ... him, *Get, thee behind me, Satan:* for it is written, *thou, shalt worship* the Lord thy God, and him only *shalt thou serve.* (Luke 4:6–8)

No one should be *servng* Mary/Satan by praying the rosary. All our *servng*, devotion, adoration, and worship belong to God.

2. Mary/Rosary Promise

“I promise my *special protection* and the *greatest graces* to all those who shall recite the rosary. (emphasis added)

2. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

God is our *refuge* and *strength*, a very *present help* in trouble. (Ps. 46:1)

Brethren, I commend you to God, and to *the word of his grace*, which is able to *build you up*, and *give you an inheritance* among all them which are sanctified.” (Acts 20:32)

Sanctified–Set apart, made holy for service to God.

Being *justified freely* by *his grace* through the *redemption* that is in *Christ Jesus.* (Rom. 3:24)

Justified—Made righteous before God.  
Redemption—Sin debt purchased from God.

For ye know *the grace* of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though *he was rich*, yet for your sakes *he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.* (2 Cor. 8:9)

Jesus was Rich—The sinless God of love.

Jesus became poor—the selfless God of love who was made “to be sin for us.” (2 Cor. 5:21)

There is no need to pray the prayers of the rosary. God is not pleased with repetitious prayers. He wants to be treated by his children as a Father, with prayers from the heart.

But when ye pray, use *not vain repetitions*, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their *much speaking*. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, *before* ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. (Matt. 6:7–9)

The Scriptures are unmistakably clear: Our prayers are to be directed to God the Father in God the Son’s name, Jesus. Which are helped and guided by God the Holy Spirit, our Helper and Comforter.

### 3. Mary/Rosary Promise

“The rosary shall be a *powerful armor against hell*, it will destroy vice, decrease sin, and defeat heresies.” (*emphasis added*)

### 3. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

Be strong in the *Lord*, and in *the power of his might*. Put on *the whole armor of God*, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against

spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you *the whole armor of God*, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with *truth*, and having on the breastplate of *righteousness*; And your feet shod with the preparation of the *gospel of peace*; Above all, taking the shield of *faith*, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of *salvation*, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the *word of God: Praying* always with all prayer and supplication *in the Spirit*, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly (To pray the Rosary? no), *to make known the mystery of the \*gospel*, For, which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak. (Eph. 6:10–20)

#### 4. Mary/Rosary Promise

*“It will cause virtue and good works to flourish; it will obtain for souls the abundant mercy of God; it will withdraw the hearts of men from the love of the world and its’ vanities, and will lift them to the desire of eternal things. Oh, that souls would sanctify themselves by this means.”*  
(*emphasis added*)

#### 4. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

As Christians, it is the very God of peace who sanctifies us through his word and with his Son Jesus’s blood. This knowledge should lead us to sanctify the Lord God in our hearts and inspire us to maintain good works.

*Sanctify* them through thy *truth*: thy *word* is truth. (John 17:17)

And *the very God of peace sanctify* you wholly; and *I pray God* your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Thess. 5:23)



The Scriptures talk about our whole spirit, soul, and body, we can learn correctly, everything we need to know about them, and their needs from the Bible. God after all, created them.

Wherefore *Jesus* also, that he might *sanctify* the people *with his own blood*, suffered without the gate. (Heb. 13:12)

*Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts ... be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear.* (1 Pet. 3:15)

*This is a faithful saying ... affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be careful to maintain good works.* These things are good and profitable. (Titus 3:8)

#### 5. Mary/Rosary Promise

“The *soul* which recommends itself to me by the recitation of the rosary, *shall not perish.*” (*emphasis added*)

The Dominican Fathers proclaim that:

“These statements of Sr. Lucy certainly form the most beautiful apologia that can be made for the Rosary.”

“Conversation between Sr. Lucy of Fatima and (Priest) Fuentes, Dec. 26, 1957”<sup>123</sup>

“The most holy Virgin in these last times in which we live has given a new efficacy to the recitation of the Rosary, to such an extent that *there is no problem*, no matter how difficult it is, whether temporal or, above all, spiritual, in the personal life of each one of us, of our families, of the families of the world, or of the religious communities, or even of the life of peoples and nations, that *cannot be solved by the Rosary*. There is no problem, I tell you, no matter how difficult it is, that we cannot resolve *by the prayer of the holy Rosary*. With the holy Rosary, we *save* ourselves; we will *sanctify* ourselves; we will *console* our Lord and *obtain* the salvation of many souls.” (*emphasis added*) —*Sr. Lucy of Fatima*

## 5. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

The above Mary promise reminds me of what Jesus said, in John 3:16, about those who believe in him shall not perish. Why then, would anyone think Mary's above promise is true? Whether Mary said it or Satan posing as Mary, it is still false in both instances.

*Fear not them which kill the body but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him (God) which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*  
(Matt. 10:28)

If Mary does not have the power to destroy someone's soul in hell, she can neither offer them salvation.

Jesus saith, "Take *my* yoke upon you and learn of *me*; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find *rest unto your souls*. (Matt. 11:29)

What an unnecessary yoke the supposed Blessed Virgin Mary has placed on her followers of having to pray the rosary repeatedly to serve her and to save loved ones from purgatory or gain supposed graces for everlasting life.

*Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.* (Matt. 22:37)

When you are serving Mary, you are disobeying the above commandment.

"Let those who think that the Church pays too much attention to Mary give heed to the fact that Our Blessed Lord Himself gave ten times as much of His life to her as He gave to His Apostles." — **Archbishop Fulton J. Sheen**

Visit [www.ANF.org](http://www.ANF.org) for more information about the America Needs Fatima program.  
What people say: <sup>124</sup>

“Thank you for everything you have sent to me. Our Lady of Fatima has captured my heart. I am now reconciled with the Church after 11 years away, and you, America Needs Fatima, have been part of that transformation. God bless your ministry.” —**L. A., Casper, Wyo.**

This next section of information comes from ANF’s Site Articles, at the top of the page is a headline which reads: Miracles linked to the Rosary.

Further down is a picture which depicts a two to three-year-old girl looking up at the face of a statue of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The caption with the picture is:

“Become a Child of Mary become Our Lady’s Companion.”

Just as Satan came before God to ask for permission to test Job (Job 1:6–22), I can see Satan coming before God to ask for permission to appear as the Blessed Virgin Mary so as to deceive people to follow him, the god of this world, through this (Mary) avenue. What else could it be?

Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them.

And the LORD said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, From, going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. (Job 1:6–7)

Here is the final push by ANF to capture your attention. They are planning a “special crusade to spread the message of Fatima” of course in America:

The goal of this effort is to “win the heart and soul of America for Mary” this will be accomplished by spreading Mary’s Fatima message and encouraging devotion to Mary’s Immaculate Heart. They claim that Mary’s prophetic Fatima message is what America needs for a “clear direction, a great purpose, and the means to achieve it.” They also claim that this Fatima message with its “admonitions, requests, and warnings ... can rightly be called a heaven-sent survival manual.”

Wow! Mary is calling for your devotion and service to her cause. She has a clear call to win over people's minds and souls. She is "Mary Most Holy." Wow!

Wow! Jesus is still the Savior of the world. His offer for the forgiveness of sin is valid until your point of death. If you choose Jesus's offer, you will receive the gift of everlasting life and the Holy Spirit as the sealer of your salvation, the Comforter of your soul, your prayer partner, and your tutor in understanding God's Word that was delivered to you in written form from heaven and given by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Wow!

Choose wisely.

Wherefore ... receive with meekness the engrafted *word*, which is able, to *save your souls*. (James 1:21)

#### 6. Mary/Rosary Promise

"Whoever shall recite the rosary devoutly, applying himself to the consideration of its sacred mysteries shall *never be conquered by misfortune. God will not chastise.*" (*emphasis added*)

#### 6. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

*Faith cometh* by hearing, and hearing *by the word of God*. (Rom. 10:17)

All that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. But *evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived*. But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; And that from a child thou hast known *the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus*.

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be *perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works*. (2 Tim. 3:12–17)

Apostle Peter's admonition on where your focus and faith should be:

That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the *appearing of Jesus Christ*:

Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory: Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of *your* souls. (1 Pet. 1:7–9)

#### 7. Mary/Rosary Promise

“Whoever shall have a true devotion for the rosary *shall not die without the sacraments* of the Church.” (*emphasis added*)

#### 7. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

More insights from Peter concerning the salvation Jesus has provided.

Who, when *he was reviled*, reviled not again; when he *\*suffered*, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: *Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree*, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: *by whose stripes ye were healed*. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto *the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls*. (1 Pet. 2:23–25)

#### 8. Mary/Rosary Promise

“Those who are faithful to recite the rosary shall have during their life and at their death *the light of God and the plentitude of His graces; at the moment of death they shall participate in the merits of the saints in paradise*.” (*emphasis added*)

#### 8. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

Mary and the saints did not shed their blood and die for our sins. Go with the many scriptures that give witness to Jesus’s merits and put your faith in Him

We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you, Since, we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the

love which ye have to all the saints, For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the \*gospel; Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world; and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth ... For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding ... *Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear, Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature.* (Col. 1:3–6, 9, 12–15)

#### 9. Mary/Rosary Promise

“I shall *deliver from purgatory* those who have been devoted to the rosary.”  
(*emphasis added*)

#### 9. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

Again, Mary cannot deliver anybody, she did not shed any of her blood for the forgiveness of sin. Sin came by man, the first Adam; sin can only be cleansed away by man, the second Adam, Jesus.

And, behold, I come quickly; and *my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.* I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning, and the end, the first and the last. *Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life and may enter in through the gates into the city.* (Rev. 22:12–14)

This is Peter’s second epistle and he is still talking about Jesus.

Beloved, *be not ignorant* of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. *The Lord is not slack* concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering

to us-ward, *not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance*. But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. *Seeing* then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, Looking, for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? ... *Beware*, lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness. But *grow in grace*, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever. Amen. (2 Pet. 3:8–12)

#### 10. Mary/Rosary Promise

“The faithful children of the rosary shall *merit a high degree of glory in heaven.*” (*emphasis added*)

#### 10. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

Here is the first verse and stanza of an encouraging hymn. May God bless you!

“*Turn Your Eyes Upon Jesus*” <sup>125</sup>

O soul, are you weary and troubled?  
No light in the darkness you, see?  
There’s light for a look at the Savior,  
And life more abundant, and free.

“Turn your eyes upon Jesus,  
Look full in His wonderful face,  
And the things of earth will grow strangely dim,  
In the light of His glory and grace.

Jesus: *I am the door*: by me if any man, enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture ... *I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.* (John 10:9, 11)

There was a cute or nice cartoon on Facebook, depicting a wolf standing behind some sheep. In front of the sheep is a man pointing and yelling “Danger! Danger! Wolf!” In the next and final frame, a sheep is pictured kicking the man in the rear and shouting “Troublemaker!” as the man is up in the air. Below the cartoon is the Bible verse:

Am I therefore become your enemy because I tell you the truth? (Gal. 4:16) —[facebook.com/KJV1611Bible/](https://www.facebook.com/KJV1611Bible/)

The apostle/Saint Paul keeps his focus on Jesus and encourages others to do the same.

Despise thou the *riches of his goodness* and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?... For there is no *respect of persons* with God ... In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men *by Jesus Christ according to my \*gospel*. (Rom. 2:4, 11, 16)

Brethren, I declare unto you the *\*gospel ... Christ \*died for our sins according to the scriptures ... he was \*buried ... he \*rose again the third day according to the scriptures: ... O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.* (1 Cor. 15:1–5, 55–57)

This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance, that *Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.* (1 Tim. 1:15)

*For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his ... we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an, high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without*



sin. Let us therefore come *boldly unto the throne of grace*, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help *in time of need*. (Heb. 4:10, 14–16)

**11. Mary/Rosary Promise**

“You shall *obtain all you ask of me* by the recitation of the rosary.”  
(*emphasis added*)

**11. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise**

And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing *according to his will*, he heareth us. (1 John 5:14)

Mary promises that you will “obtain all you ask of” her by praying the rosary, but the scriptures promise that the Son of God will hear and answer if our prayers are according to his will.

There is therefore *now no condemnation* to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit ... if God be for us, who can be *against us*? He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also *freely give us all things*? (Rom. 8:1, 31–32)

**12. Mary/Rosary Promise**

“All those who propagate the holy rosary shall be *aided by me in their necessities*.” (*emphasis added*)

**12. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise**

I know both how to be *abased*, and I know how to *abound*: everywhere and in all things, I am instructed both to be *full* and to be *hungry*, both to *abound* and to *suffer need*. *I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me*. (Phil. 4:12–13)

*Perverse* disputings of men of corrupt minds, and *destitute of the truth*, supposing that *gain is godliness*: from such withdraw thyself. But *godliness with contentment is great gain*. For we brought nothing into

this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. *And having food and raiment let us be therewith content—and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness ... fight the good fight of faith ... keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ ... Who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;* (1 Tim. 6:5–8, 11–15)

Jesus: Therefore, I say unto you, *Take, no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on—for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.* (Matt. 6:25, 32–33)

**13. Mary/Rosary Promise**

“I have obtained from my Divine Son that all the advocates of the rosary *shall have for intercessors the entire celestial court* during their life and at the hour of death.” *(emphasis added)*

**13. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise**

Who is he that condemneth? *It is Christ* that *\*died*, yea rather, that is *\*risen* again, who is even at the right hand of God, *who also maketh intercession for us.* (Rom. 8:34)

**14. Mary/Rosary Promise**

“All who recite the rosary *are my sons, and brothers* of my only son Jesus Christ.” *(emphasis added)*

**14. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise**

*For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.* (Rom. 8:14–16)

## 15. Mary/Rosary Promise

“Devotion of my rosary is a *great sign of predestination.*” (*emphasis added*)

Some of you may not be familiar with the rosary prayer, the first stanza is based on scripture the second is not.

### The Hail Mary

“Hail Mary, full of grace, the Lord is with Thee! Blessed art Thou among women and Blessed is the fruit of Thy Womb Jesus.

Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners now and at the hour of our death! Amen.”

This is not a prayer but my redeemed rendition of the Hail Mary.

### The Hail Jesus

“Hail, the forgiving Savior Jesus, born full of grace and truth, God his Father is with him! Blessed is the fruit of thy empty tomb Jesus, sinners made saints through the only name that saves us. Holy Jesus, Son of God, strengthen the redeemed to love, may they walk like thee, forgiving others, with strength from above. Holy Spirit, third person of God, thank you for praying to the Father the righteous desires of my heart and for the joy awaiting me at the hour of my death! Amen.”

Come, be redeemed, bow, and worship the Lord God Almighty the King. Your Creator crucified and resurrected for you, coming again, for those of you, who trust in him.

## 15. God/Jesus Scriptural Promise

*Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For, thy sake we are killed, all, the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.*

*For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Rom. 8:35–39)*

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. For whom he did foreknow, he also did *predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son*, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover, Whom, he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them *he also justified*: and whom he justified, them *he also glorified*. (Rom. 8:28–30)

And if children, then *heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ*; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. For I reckon that the *sufferings* of this present time are *not worthy to be compared with the glory* which shall be revealed in us.” (Rom. 8:17–18)

“25 Quotes from St. John Vianney” <sup>126</sup> —this one first seen on Facebook.

“If you invoke the Blessed Virgin when you are tempted, she will come at once to your help, and Satan will leave you.” —*Saint Therese, #10*

Apostle Paul, a saint long before Vianney was born in 1786, gave the Church, or saints, in Corinth two admonitions concerning the Christian faith.

There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but *God is faithful*, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

*Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.* (1 Cor. 10:13–14)

The example of God’s promise and the following verses clearly show the battle between the supposed Blessed Virgin Mary and God. Surely, this shows Lucifer’s attempt to dethrone God under the guise of Mary.

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most, High. (Isa. 14:12–14)

America Needs Fatima shared this before the promise.

“Wherever he goes”<sup>127</sup>

“The man who burns with the fire of divine love is a son of the Immaculate Heart of Mary and wherever he goes, he enkindles that flame.” —**St. Anthony Maria Claret**

The ANF blog shares their mission:

“Because *she is the solution* for our times. Our mission is to spread devotion to *Our Lady of Fatima*, the Holy Rosary and to oppose blasphemy in the public square.”

God can meet and exceed any, and all of Mary’s supposed promises. Flee from Mary and go all in for God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit, and give them the worship and glory they alone deserve!

“Miracles Still Reported at the Site of the First Marian Apparition in the U.S.” —miracles of conversion ... are plentiful.<sup>128</sup>

“This grace-filled place has been attracting visitors from all over the world —If they’re Catholic, they’ll receive the Sacrament of Reconciliation.

“During the first two apparitions, Mary said nothing. On the third, however, she urged Adele to pray and offer holy Communion for the conversion of sinners.

“‘If they do not convert and do penance, my Son will be obliged to punish them,’ she said.

“She gently admonished Adele ... Adele asked her, ‘What more can I do, dear Lady?’ (Our Lady said.) ‘Gather the children in this wild country and teach them what they should know for salvation.’

Mary—“‘Teach them their catechism, how to sign themselves with the Sign of the Cross, and how to approach the sacraments; that is what I wish you to do. Go and fear nothing, I will help you.’”

Lisa Larson the shrine docent (guide, teaching staff) explains that they always stress the value “of the sacraments, of the Rosary, of Mary’s graces.” Larson goes on to mention that just like in Adele’s case, today’s Catholics are still “poorly catechized” with only 30% actually believing in Jesus Real Presence in the Eucharist and many who just do not participate in the sacraments at all. However, Larson is still upbeat mentioning “Everything we do here helps people to know the Truth.”

“At the National Shrine of Our Lady of Good Help,” it is emphasized again that “miracles of conversion are plentiful” and for whatever reason the visitors come “they depart with their faith and convictions restored” some who had been away (not receiving the sacraments?) for 20 or 30 years.

The articles author finishes with—“At the shrine, I had the distinct feeling of Mary’s presence and of knowing that Mary not only was there but still is there now.” —*Marge Fenelon, National Catholic Register*

From the above piece we see again the Catholic teaching that conversion is synonymous with receiving the sacraments of penance and communion, and that, the simplicity

of their plan of salvation involves the catechism, rituals, and sacraments. For the Biblical Christian/Christian it is scripture, Jesus finished sacrifice on the cross and faith.

To plan your pilgrimage to the place in America where the *Queen of Heaven* appeared on earth, “visit our website today.”<sup>129</sup>

## A SCRIPTURAL PORTRAYAL OF MARY

Let us take-a-look at the aka Blessed Virgin Mary, who in scripture has other children. (see, Mark 6:3, page 77, Saint Joseph Edition of the New American Bible).

There came then his *brethren* and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him. And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy, mother and thy *brethren* without seek for thee. And he answered them, saying, Who, is my mother, or my brethren? And he looked round about, on them which sat about him, and said, *Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.* (Mark 3:31–35)

Something similar is stated by Jesus in Matthew 12:49–50 and in Luke 8:19–21.

Here Mary is *not* especially esteemed. Those individuals who are especially esteemed are they which “do the will of God,” “do the will of my Father ... in heaven” and “hear the word of God and do it.” Every *true believer* can be esteemed equally with Mary because she herself heard the Word of God and did it.

Is not this the carpenter, the *son of Mary*, the *brother* of James, and Joses, and of Juda and Simon? And are not *his sisters* here with us? And they were offended at him. But *Jesus* said unto them, *A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country*, and among his own *kin*, and in his own *house*. And he could there do no mighty work ... *And he marveled because of their unbelief.* (Mark 6:3–6)

Matthew 13:53–58 expresses a parallel statement. Mary is *not* especially esteemed.

In the Catholic New American Bible, St. Joseph Medium-Size Edition, concerning the verse Mark 3:32, the reader is encouraged to check the comments concerning Mark 6:3, on page 77.

If the statements in this verse refer to Jesus's half-brothers and sisters, then that destroys the Catholic teaching of Mary's perpetual virginity. So, the Catholic Church takes the position that the Greek terms used for these expressions of brother and sister possibly could be referring to cousins, thus saving their traditional faith in the Perpetual Virginity of Mary. However, the Catholic Commentary contained therein readily admits that if the Church did not teach that Mary was a perpetual virgin, the regular meaning of the scriptures would be that Jesus had physical brothers and sisters born to Joseph and Mary.

Therefore, Jesus would have or, better yet, has at least four named half-brothers and at least two half-sisters.

The Gospel of Luke tells us this truth about Mary:

The angel Gabriel was sent from God ... To a virgin ... the virgin's name was Mary ... And the angel ... said, *Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women ... Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. And, behold, thou shalt (1.) conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt (2.) call his name JESUS.*

- (A.) *He shall be great, and shall be*
- (B.) *called the Son of the Highest: and*
- (C.) *The Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And*
- (D.) *he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and*
- (E.) *of his kingdom there shall be no end ...*
- (1b.) *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee:*
- (2b.) *therefore, also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.*

And behold, thy cousin, Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age ... For with God nothing shall be impossible.



And *Mary said*, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; *be it unto me according to thy word*. And the angel departed from her. (Luke 1:26–38; read also from verse 39 through Luke chapter 2)

*Blessed*, is the womb that bare thee ... (Jesus) Yea, rather, *blessed*, are they that hear the word of God, and keep it. (Luke 11:27–28)

Here Mary is *not* especially esteemed. Again, Jesus focuses on the word of God and keeping or obeying it.

The remaining scriptures which speak of Mary:

Matthew 1:18–25; 2:9–11; John 2:1–11; 19:25–27; Acts 1:13–14)

To close out this portion about Mary, let us be reminded again about *Jesus*.

Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us *with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ*. (Eph. 1:1–3)

All spiritual blessings come from God the Father to those who are in Christ, Mary has none to dispense. Her blessing to the world was being obedient to God and his word in giving birth to Jesus. Praise God every believer has a role to play in being a blessing to the world through obeying God's word.

And *you hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sins ... *And hath raised us up together and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus*: That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us *through Christ Jesus*. (Eph. 2:1, 6–7)

Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All, these things will I give Thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. *Then saith Jesus* unto him, Get, thee hence, Satan: for *it*

*is written, thou, shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve.* (Matt. 4:8–10)

Catholics may say that they do not worship *Mary, but they do serve her*. Remember her first promise to those who pray the rosary:

“Whoever shall faithfully *serve me* by recitation of the rosary, shall receive signal graces.” (*emphasis added*)



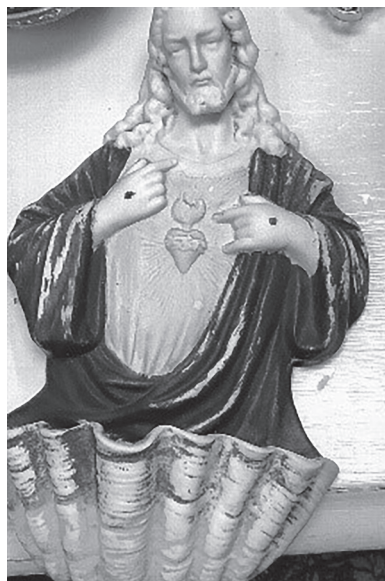
## Chapter Twelve

# HOLY WATER

**H**oly water is used from *birth* to the *grave*, from an infant's *baptism* and to the blessing of the *casket*.

Holy water fountains or plates are placed at the entrance to Catholic Churches to be used when people *arrive* and *exit*. Parishioners may also ask for holy water to bring home. It is said that holy water, is especially used as a sure way of making the devil flee!

### **HOLY WATER—REMINDS CATHOLICS OF THEIR BAPTISM AND “DEVIL’S FLY ... FROM” IT!**



#### “Blessing of the Backpacks”<sup>130</sup>

Coldwater Ohio Parish. Holy Trinity Catholic Church had a blessing of the backpacks before the first day of school. This was performed by the Reverend Alexander Witt, as shared in the Church bulletin. It serves as a reminder each year that “they are not walking alone but with Jesus.” — *The Daily Standard, Celina Ohio*

#### “Holy Water”<sup>131</sup>

Blessing yourself with Holy Water signifies repentance of sin, offers protection from

evil, and is a reminder of water baptism. “Just as water and blood flowed from the Sacred Heart of our Lord as He hung upon the cross—signifying the great sacraments of baptism and holy Eucharist, the taking of holy water and making the sign of the cross remind us of our baptism in preparation for the reception of the holy Eucharist.” —*Priest William Saunders, Arlington Catholic Herald*

“Spiritual Weapons: Holy Water”<sup>132</sup>

“Why Use Holy Water? What’s the Point?”

It has “the power to forgive venial sins.” It is done in preparation for receiving the sacraments, “especially the Eucharist.” Thirdly, the devil and his “demons hate holy water.”

“I have found by experience that *there is nothing from which the devils fly more quickly than from holy water. (emphasis added)* They also fly from the cross, but they return almost immediately. Certainly, the power of holy water must be great; for my part, my soul feels particular comfort in taking it, and very generally a refreshment and interior delight which I cannot express.” (Autobiography). —**St. Teresa of Avila**

“Holy water is an excellent way to protect yourself, your family, or your home from the attacks of the evil one!” —*Sam Guzman, The Catholic Gentleman*

“The spiritual power of Holy Water: 6 effects every Catholic should know”<sup>133</sup>

- (1) Erases venial sins.
- (2) Removes distractions in prayer.
- (3) Dispels evil powers over people and places.
- (4) It disposes us, with the grace of the Holy Spirit, to greater devotion.
- (5) Scares away demons.
- (6) It disposes us to receive or administer the sacraments. —*ChurchPOP, Editor*

The six spiritual powers revealed in Scripture:

- (1) The *blood* of Jesus cleanses the true believer from all sin.

But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light ... *the blood of Jesus Christ his son cleanseth us from all sin* ... If we *confess our sins*, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our sins*, and to cleanse us from *all unrighteousness*. (1 John 1:7, 9)

In whom we have *redemption through his blood*, the *forgiveness of sins*, according to the riches of *his grace*. (Eph. 1:7; see also Eph. 2:13; Col. 1:14; 1 Pet. 1:18, 19; Heb. 9:12, 22).

- (2) The Holy Spirit helps us in our prayers.

*The Spirit also helpeth* ... for we know not *what we should pray* for as we ought ... *Spirit itself maketh intercession for us* ... *the Spirit* ... *maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God*. (Rom. 8:26–27)

- (3) The *blood* of Christ will purge our conscience. We have the *armor* of God to withstand the devil.

How much more shall *the blood of Christ*, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, *purge your conscience from dead works* to serve the living God? (Heb. 9:14)

Be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. *Put on the whole armor of God*, that ye may be able to *stand against the wiles of the devil*—Above all, taking the *shield of faith*—to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. (Eph. 6:10–11, 16)

- (4) The Holy Spirit is a *gift*. He is involved in our *sanctification*. He helps us in our *access* to the Father. By praying in the Holy Spirit, we are building ourselves *up in the faith*.

Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, *through sanctification of the Spirit*, unto *obedience* and sprinkling of the *blood* of Jesus Christ: *Grace* unto you, and *peace, be multiplied*. (1 Pet. 1:2)

Then Peter said unto them, *repent*, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive *the gift of the Holy Ghost*. (Acts 2:38; see also Eph. 2:18; Jude 1:20–21)

- (5) When you *submit* yourself to God and *resist* the devil, he will flee. Learn and grow in the knowledge of *Christ and live like him*, giving no place for the devil.

Know ye not that *friendship of the world is enmity with God? —resist the devil, and he will flee from you*. Draw nigh to God, and he will, draw nigh to you. (James 4:4–8)

Jesus: Gave some, apostles ... prophets ... evangelists ... pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the *unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God* ... That we henceforth be *no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive* ... *Put off* ... deceitful lusts ... *Put on* ... *true holiness—neither give place to the devil—be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ’s sake hath forgiven you*. (Eph. 4:11–14, 22, 24, 27, 32)

Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he (Jesus) also himself likewise took part of the same; that through *death he might destroy* him that had the power of death, that is, *the devil*; And deliver them who *through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage*. (Heb. 2:14–15)

- (6) The Church has been purchased with the *blood* of Jesus and *saved* from God’s wrath through *faith*.

Feed the church of God, *which he hath purchased with his own blood*. (Acts 20:28)

Much more then, being *now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.* (Rom. 5:9; see also Col. 1:20–23)

“Step One: Victory Depends on Standing on the Enduring Word of God.”<sup>134</sup>  
 The “Sea of Glass” in Revelation 15 depicts the Word of God which cleanses from all sin. Ephesians 5:26 mentions the cleansing power of water and its symbolic relationship to the Word: That He [the Lord Jesus Christ, our great High Priest] might sanctify it [the Church] and cleanse it (with) the washing of water by the Word. (Eph. 5:26) —*Adrian Rodgers, Love Worth Finding*

**What might happen to those who trust in and use holy water?**

*Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden underfoot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? (Heb. 10:29)*

**The following Catholic articles express the importance and purpose of holy water.**

“When Using Holy Water”<sup>135</sup>

“By this holy water and by Your Precious Blood, wash away all my sins, O Lord.

“Holy water is a means of spiritual wealth—a sacramental that remits venial sin. The Church strongly urges its use, especially when dangers threaten. The devil hates holy water because of its power over him. He cannot long abide in a place or near a person that is often sprinkled with this blessed water.” —*Catholic Online*

“Priest Exorcizes Las Vegas Shooter’s Hotel Room with Holy Water after Feeling Evil Presence”<sup>136</sup>



Priest Clete Kiley, “could sense an evil presence in the room, so he used a palm branch to disperse Holy Water while praying to the Holy Spirit.”  
—*ChurchPOP Editor*

“Orthodox Priest Cleanses His City’s Downtown with Holy Water after LGBT Parade”<sup>137</sup>

“An Eastern Orthodox priest visited the parade site and cleansed the space with holy water ... Holy water has long been a powerful sacramental used by Christians.” —*ChurchPOP Editor*

“Bishop to Exorcise Entire City from Helicopter with Holy Water: ‘We Have to Get Rid of the Devil’”

“Update: Bishop Will Not Exorcise City Via Helicopter, Will Process and Bless with Fire Truck”<sup>138</sup>

“Diocese of Buenaventura, Colombia Bishop Ruben Dario Jaramillo Montoya will lead an exorcism over Buenaventura ... during one of its festivals.

“The exorcism is a response to the demonic infestation he believes is responsible for the terrible crimes occurring in the city. More than 50 homicides were reported between Jan. and May ... ‘We want to go around all of Buenaventura, from the air, and pour holy water on it to see if we can exorcise and get out all those demons that are destroying our port, so that God’s blessing comes and gets rid of all the wickedness that is in our streets’ Bishop Montoya told Blu Radio of Colombia.

“Pennsylvania Diocese exorcist Msgr. John Esseff of Scranto told Patti Armstrong of the National Catholic Register that ‘if every bishop woke up to their power, the devil wouldn’t have a snowball’s chance in hell—the results would be amazing. The power of the Church entrusted to the bishops is exactly what the devil fears most,’ Msgr. Esseff said.” —*ChurchPOP Editor*



*Chapter Thirteen*

## **CHRISTIAN TESTIMONIES, CONTEMPORARY AND FROM SCRIPTURE**

**I**n the previous chapters, we have looked at and discussed the teachings of Catholicism. In this chapter, you will hear from some who came out of Catholicism, Judaism, or sinfulness, and some who were good people but still were sinners who needed and wanted more.

### **MARK LENNARTZ—RAISED CATHOLIC**

My name is Mark, and this is how I have become a Christian.

I was born and raised in a loving caring Catholic family. My parents raised me the best they knew how. They took me to church every Sunday and always told me that I had to go to church to learn about God and the Catholic faith.

On November 22, 1985, I married my wife, Rita, who was also Catholic. Sometime in March of 1990, she came to me and said that she turned her life over to Jesus Christ, and she felt as she was now a whole new person, and she knew she was going to heaven.

I thought to myself “good, maybe she will settle down a little” because she lived a more outgoing lifestyle than I did. She told me that she and her friend, Mary, were praying for me that I would do the same. I told her that I thought I was going to heaven because I was a good person. I was nice to people, went to church regularly, obeyed the Ten Commandments, and went to confession. Rita told me I was going about it all wrong. She said I needed a personal relationship with Jesus, so Rita and her friend, Mary, asked me if I would meet with the pastor at their church. The date was August 12, 1990. I agreed, and during the meeting, the pastor explained to me why I needed Jesus in my life and what I needed to do to ask Jesus into my life. He told me I needed to admit that

I was a sinner because the Bible says, “All have sinned and come short of the glory of God” (*Rom. 3:23*). The only way back to God is through Jesus Christ.

I needed to realize that being a good person was not enough. Because it is by God’s grace and our faith that we are saved, and it is a gift of God: “For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast” (*Eph. 2:8–9*).

I needed to believe that Jesus died for us sinners. *Romans 5:8* says: “But God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.” That our sin is forgiven by the shed blood of Jesus, as *1 John 1:7* tells us: “But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.”

I needed to put my faith in Jesus alone for my salvation. “And they said, Believe, on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house” (*Acts 16:31*), and *John 14:6* says: “Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me.”

After the pastor explained why I needed to do this, I prayed with him and accepted Jesus as my Savior!

Now the difference in my life is I know for sure I am going to heaven, instead of “I think so.” Now I *want* to go to church and read the Bible, instead of thinking “I have to.” Also, I want to be a good person because I am now a child of God.

Is life easier for me now? No, not really, but I know that Jesus is with me during my life’s journey, and I know that I am going to heaven.

I also want to say that God gave me another chance. About forty years ago, I was in a very serious car accident and was the only survivor out of four people. My neighbor told me that God was not done with me yet. At the time I was not for sure what he meant by saying that, but now I understand. “The Lord is ... not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance” (*2 Pet. 3:9*).

Praise God!

### **PART 3: “LETTER FROM A FORMER NUN”**<sup>139</sup>

Pat served as a nun for ten years. A few years after she left, she joined a self-realization fellowship. She assembled a Hindu altar in her home.

Around a year later she “was introduced to the Bible,” and some Christian co-workers shared the plan of salvation with her. Then on “Good Friday morning in 1977, while sitting in front of her ‘Hindu altar,’ she began to think upon what “those Christians had told me and Christ spoke to me there, and I gave my heart to Him right then. He will search us out in the most obscure and strange places.” She is so “grateful to Him” for not giving up on her and for the continuing opportunities she has-to share Christ with Catholics and those in the New Age.

Pat would also appreciate your prayers because she is having constant “opportunities to share with Catholics.”

One of her encounters involved a woman she met in a store. While she was sharing with her how she had trusted in Christ’s sacrifice and realized that Jesus had done that for her personally, the woman told her that she had “just realized a few months ago that Jesus died for her personally,” Then she told her about a grandson that was going to “make his first ‘Holy’ communion.”

Pat asked her if she could share something with her that she was “somewhat curious about.” She answered, “Yes.” Pat began, “So at the Last Supper when Jesus said, ‘This is My Blood’ over the wine chalice, do you believe it turned into Jesus’s blood and that He passed it around for all of His Jewish disciples to drink who were sitting there at the Last Supper?” The lady said, “Yes.”

Pat continues, sharing, that if this is what Jesus did, then since “Jews being Kosher were forbidden by God’s law to drink blood, then wouldn’t Jesus have caused all of them to sin by giving them blood to drink?”

The lady, stunned, replied, “I never thought about that.” —*Lighthouse Trails Inc.*

The Scriptures in both the Old and New Testaments teach that the blood should not be drunk or consumed.

For the *life* of the flesh *is in the blood*: and I have given it to you upon the altar *to make an atonement for your souls*: for it is *the blood* that *maketh an atonement for the soul*. . . . “*It shall be a perpetual statute for your generations throughout all your dwellings, that ye eat neither fat nor blood.* (Lev. 17:11; 3:17)

Jesus: Think not that *I am come* to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but *to fulfil*. For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but *whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven*. For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter, into the kingdom of heaven. (Matt. 5:17–20)

Acts chapter 15 deals with the controversy of whether the Gentile followers of Christ should be circumcised or not for their salvation as some of the sect of the Pharisees believed. In Jerusalem—James, Peter, Paul, Barnabas, the apostles, and elders met to discuss this matter. Apostle James presents the results:

Wherefore, my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God: But that we write unto them, that they abstain *from* pollutions of idols, and *from* fornication, and *from* things strangled, and *from* blood . . . It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, Men that have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth. For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost,

and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden. (Acts 15:19–20, 25–28; see also: Matt. 18:15–20).

Jesus’s comment in this next verse shows that the apostles, in Acts 15, were putting an aspect of their God-given power into practice:

Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. (Matt. 18:18)

Catholicism has failed on the admonition to “abstain from pollutions of idols” seen through their veneration of statues, their adoration of the Eucharist, the Monstrance with the Blessed Sacrament, and their processions of Corpus Christi.

The next two admonitions are to restrain from “fornication ... and from blood.”

Technically Catholics do not literally drink human (or even animal) blood at Mass, but through the false doctrine of transubstantiation, which must be taken literally to be Catholic, they are eating and drinking the supposed flesh and blood of Jesus, God’s Son.

This blood being the supposed blood shed on the Cross for the forgiveness of sin and, which now must be consumed during the Mass to receive eternal life. Of, course Catholicism misinterprets that as well for Jesus in the scriptures clearly says that:

Whoso, eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood *hath eternal life*; and *I will raise him up* at the last day. (John 6:54)

In light, of this, if in the Old Testament, the law was not to eat or drink the blood of the animals because it was used to make atonement for sin seeing that precious life was in the blood. How much more precious is the blood of Jesus, which is given in atonement for our sin, not to be drunk or consumed.

The false disciples missed the spiritual message behind Jesus words, always thinking in worldly ways to dismiss the spiritual truths and replace them with something they can see or physically/religiously do.

## GARY WESTGERDES—RAISED CATHOLIC

At the age of seven, I was being taught about heaven and hell in my Catholic catechism class. I was fearful for and convicted of my sinfulness, and I feared God and the destiny of my soul. After being in this frame of mind for a few days or weeks, our teacher shared with the class the compelling Bible verse *John 3:16*: “For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son that whosoever believeth in him shall not perish but have everlasting life.” With childlike faith, I took the verse to heart. I believed Jesus died to forgive my sin and to give me eternal life. The moment I believed, God’s assurance of salvation and the joy of the Holy Spirit filled my heart. I wanted to obey Jesus, be like Him, and be nice to others.

I am not sure how long, maybe several months, but it was during the summer, the day before my eighth birthday. My parents were having our home dedicated to the Sacred Hearts of Jesus and Mary. On that day, a church leader or priest asked me why I was so happy. I told him “because I’m going to heaven when I die.” He stood up, stepped back, chuckling, and laughed saying, “Oh no! You can never know for sure if you’re going to heaven or not until after you’re dead because you can never know for sure if you’ve been good enough or not.” I was in shock! After his visit, I remember looking at four of my brothers and sister running around the house screaming and Mom scolding one and thinking, “If you have to be good enough to get to heaven, no one in this family is going to make it!”

However, my religious upbringing taught that eternal life is something that you must work toward through the church, with good deeds, the sacraments, and devotions.

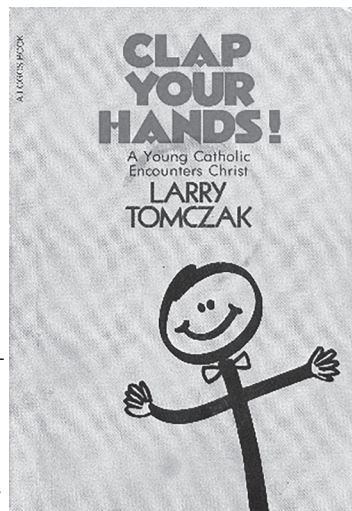
I always hoped the church was wrong and God’s Word was true, but I had nowhere to turn. I was a good kid, growing up, but after high school, and then during my tour of duty in the Navy, I began conforming to the world’s pattern.

After three years, my rank was moving up. I was having a good time, and my daily jogging had me in excellent health. (I had received a few witnesses about Jesus, and took them to heart, but I did not really do anything about them; I felt my life was all, together.) I remember telling God jogging is what I wanted to do with my life. That very week I was given a desk job and began having pain in my leg. The pain continued and increased, and three weeks later I found myself hospitalized with a blood clot in my lungs that had passed from my leg and through my heart. With my life at age twenty-three coming so close to death, I began to reconsider my life and its direction.

After recovering from the clot and being placed on limited duty, I began to think about my sin and my accountability toward God. I wanted to know where I would have gone if I had died. I started going over to the library to read God’s Word, and God began to work on my heart. A friend asked if I was worried about my leg, and I said, “No, because I knew God could work things out for the best.” He asked if I was a Christian, and I said, “I don’t know.” He then invited me to his church. I went, and after the service, I went forward to pray and seek God. Afterward, my friend encouraged me to read the Bible.

That week, as I was reading in *First John*, this verse hit me hard, “He that committeth sin is of the devil” (*1 John 3:8*). I had always thought I was a pretty good person, but suddenly I knew I deserved and was headed for hell. I was shattered. God had placed His finger on my sin, and I could not deny it. I went back to the library to read 1 John again the next two days, with the same results. I knew my life was not worth living if I was just going to die and end up in hell. I cried out to God about my struggle but did not communicate this to my friend.

That following Saturday, my friend helped me pick out some Christian books. One of the books I read, by Larry Tomczak, *Clap your hands! A Young Catholic Encounters Christ*,<sup>140</sup> shared the simple gospel message that I had always hoped was true back when I was seven. The scriptures shared in that book showed that there was nothing of myself that I could offer to God for my sins. My sins deserve the eternal punishment of a Holy God. But God’s love reached out to me through Jesus Christ. Throughout the week I had acknowledged my sinfulness to God. I then read, “For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast” (*Eph. 2:8–9*) and realized that eternal life is given as a gift to all who believe in Jesus. It was then that God’s mercy, grace, and peace flooded my soul with understanding and forgiveness. I knew that what I was told at age seven by the priest or church leader was false. My joy returned as my eyes were opened to the truth of God’s Word that salvation was through faith in Jesus and His atoning sacrifice on the Cross. I had experienced Emmanuel “God with us” (*Matt. 1:23; Isa. 7:14*). Praise God: “Now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ” (*Eph. 2:13*).





(Larry Tomczak sharing the Gospel with his father) “These things I am writing to you that you may know that you have eternal life—you who believe in the name of the Son of God“ (*1 John 5:13, Conf. Version*). “Let me see that.” Dad reached for the Bible. He focused on the verse I had underlined in red. “Hey! You’re right! It does say that!” “Let me ask you another question,” I began. “Dad, suppose that you were to die tonight and stand before God, and He were to ask you, “Why should I let you into heaven?” what would you reply?” Dad mused over the question for a few moments and then said, “Well, I’ve tried to be a good Catholic ... lead a decent life, and obey the Ten Commandments. I’ve never intentionally missed Mass. I don’t think I’ve been too bad.” “Anything else?” “I’ve been an usher for a number of years and helped out in a lot of parish projects. I’ve always given my Sunday offerings, too!” “So you’d say to God: “I’ve been a good Catholic, led a decent life, obeyed the Commandments, attended Mass, served as an usher, helped out in the parish, and faithfully gave a weekly offering, right?” “Right.” “Dad, I’ve got some good news for you! Heaven is not something a person earns or deserves or works for. According to the Bible, heaven—eternal life—is an absolutely free-gift.” “A free gift?” “Yep, the Bible says that eternal life is a-free-gift unearned, unworked for, and undeserved. Free!” “Oh, go on; nothing’s free!”

“I sat down next to him on the couch. Opening the Bible to *Romans 6:23*, I pointed to the verse so that Dad could read for himself. “For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is life everlasting in Christ Jesus our Lord” (*Conf. Version*). “Hey!” Dad exclaimed. “I never knew that!” “Dad, when the Gospel is read at Mass, do you remember hearing the words of Jesus, “How narrow the gate and close the way that leads to life! And few there are who find it?” (*Matt. 7:14 Conf. Version*). “Sure.” “Well, if only a few find this gift of eternal life, wouldn’t you like to be one of them?” “Of course!”

“The first thing we want to look at is what God says about man.” Flipping the pages of the Bible, I found *Romans 3:23* for Dad to read: “all have sinned and have need of the glory of God.” Dad looked up from the page. “So, what’s new about that? In the Mass we say, ‘I confess to almighty God ... that I have sinned through my fault.’ I know that everyone is a sinner.” “Well, because man is a sinner, and a sinner can do no good, thing, of himself anyway, it is impossible for him to earn his way into heaven, even if it weren’t free, which we’ve just seen that it is. The Bible states this very clearly: “For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not from yourselves, for it is gift of God; not as the outcome of works, lest anyone may boast (*Eph. 2:8–9, Conf. Version*). “Hold on a second,” Dad said. “Let me read that last one again!” His face appeared slightly

pale. “Larry,” he finally said, “I want to receive this gift of eternal life. What do I do?” “See, Dad, “I said, “faith is the key that opens the door to eternal life.” ... I tried to live a decent life. I tried to obey the Ten Commandments. I, I, I, I, I was really trying to be my own savior.”

Jesus gives a warning to those who teach a false gospel, especially teaching it to children:

Verily I say unto you, except ye be *converted*, and become as *little children*, ye shall not enter-into the kingdom of heaven ... And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me. *But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me*, it were better for him that a millstone, were hanged about his neck, and that he, were drowned in the depth of the sea. (Matt. 18:3, 5, 6)

“At what age are children required to attend Mass?” <sup>141</sup>

The Code of Cannon Law says, “The faithful are obliged to participate in the Mass” (1247), but it does not define the age at which someone becomes a member of the faithful. But canon 11 tells us, “Merely ecclesiastical laws bind those who have been baptized in the Catholic Church or received into it, possess the efficient use of reason, and, unless the law expressly provides otherwise, have completed *seven* years of age.” (*emphasis added*) —Trent Horn, *Catholic Answers*

## **DAVE GOODWILL—JOURNEY TO FREEDOM FROM HOMOSEXUALITY**

Maybe your story has some different players and components, but some of the same thoughts plague:

- \* “I have to accept who I am and just live with it”
- \* “I can’t talk to anyone about this because they won’t understand.”
- \* “I know there’s only one way out of this. I’ll just end it all, and it will be easier for everyone.”

For as long as I can remember, I’ve always felt that I was different. However, I could never say exactly why. At about the age of fourteen, I discovered what I thought was the reason I felt different. I was with a friend from school and had my first experience

with homosexuality. At that time, I believed I had discovered what I was searching for and that this was the lifestyle for me. After many years of living this way, I discovered this lifestyle left me feeling unfulfilled and empty, but I did not know why. Years later at a home Bible study, I came across a verse that stated my homosexual encounters were morally wrong. I wanted to do what was right. I wanted out of this lifestyle, and I desperately hated what I had become. I told myself, “No problem, it’s wrong. I hate it; I’ll quit it.” As I struggled to break free of this, I encountered people’s opinion on homosexuality. This ranged from ridicule to hatred. I realized that I could not go to any of my family or friends for help. Their reaction would be rejection of me, not my lifestyle. I was all alone as I fought this battle raging within. I felt the only safe place I could possibly discuss my feelings was with my gay friends and the gay community. However, they could offer none of the help I desperately wanted. The attitude of the gay community and the “world” is, “You are what you are; just accept yourself for what you are.”

For over fifteen years, I tried and failed to get free of the grip that homosexuality had on my life. This cycle of trying and failing threw me into a deep depression. My career at that time was a cross-country truck driver. While in this depressed state, the solution was placed in my mind. “The reason you have such a struggle is because you can’t change what you are. Either accept it or die.” I happened to be in Pennsylvania, crossing Snow-Shoe Mountain, when the “way out” presented itself. This mountain offered me an escape. On the way down, there is a ravine about a quarter of a mile deep with lots of trees. I would be free of these homosexual feelings forever. It would be just another truck driver who fell asleep at the wheel. It is a terrible thing, but it happens. Ready to take this way out, I headed toward the ravine. Just before I hit the edge, one of the Bible Study lessons I had recently studied flashed across my mind. My life is a gift from God and to throw that away would be far worse than anything I could ever do or have done. Suicide was not the way out. I regained my composure and got back on the road where I belonged.

On my way home, I stopped at my neighbor’s house. He knew me well enough to know that I was in deep trouble. He offered prayer and suggested that I get involved in Christian fellowship somewhere. Following this recommendation, I attended church in late 1989. The love and compassion I felt on my first visit assured me that this was the right place for me and may hold the keys to my way out.

After a couple of visits, I confided in the pastor about some issues in my life, carefully avoiding the important issue of my homosexuality. As he helped me through those areas, I began to trust him more and more. Finally, I shared my homosexual struggles

with him. The response was one of love and acceptance of *me*. Now, I did not have to struggle alone. It was like a giant weight had been lifted. Now in times of overload and depression, help was just a phone call away.

I became involved in a discipleship class. I continued to grow in the Lord and eventually felt comfortable enough to talk with another brother about my sinful past. As I learned to walk away from this behavior, they became my accountability net, encouraging me in times of weakness and during times of severe trials. In each, they worked to get me back on track with God's will and never gave up on me.

However, temptation was out there, no matter what I did or where I went. Even my thoughts were used against me. Thoughts like "Remember how much easier living was when you just accepted what you were" or "Just this once won't hurt; who is going to find out?" I left the truck-driving profession because I thought this would stop the temptations since this profession seemed to offer an abundance of opportunities. However, the temptations were as strong as ever. I discovered at times like these, the memorized Word of God, the power of the Holy Spirit, and the tough questions I knew I would get from my accountability group gave me the strength to resist. I began to rely on *1 Corinthians 10:13*: "There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it." This verse helped me in two ways. First, it assured me that this is not something new that has never happened to anybody else, so God will not be surprised or shocked. I am not the first, and I will not be the last. Second, it told me that God always provides a way out. The way out can be many things, such as a place, a thing, or a person to go to for support.

I learned that my best defenses were building my relationship with the Lord through prayer and Bible study and by building my relationships with fellow believers. I learned that if I were to succeed, these two things had to happen. Without these, my life would only get further out of control.

As time went on, I realized God had a plan for my life. The Lord wanted to use me and the experiences of my life to help others. With the support of other believers, I began this journey. My biggest step was to tell the story about the struggles I have had with homosexuality, a secret I would have rather kept to myself. It has been a long hard struggle to get to where I am now, and it is a long way from over. Of all the difficult things I have had to do in my life, letting anybody see a side of me that is not pretty was one of the

most difficult. But as I am following the Lord's will for my long journey with Him. I hope that maybe somebody else will not have to struggle and suffer alone as-long-as I did.

I am not asking anyone to accept homosexuality as an alternative lifestyle. It is imperative to understand that God makes it clear in His holy Word that homosexuality is wrong. This can be found in *Leviticus 18:22* and *1 Corinthians 6:9–11* “the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God ... nor effeminate ... shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.”

If you feel trapped in homosexuality, I want you to know there is *hope*. You do not have to stay in this lifestyle; there is a way out and a chance to change through Jesus Christ. It is not easy or an overnight change, no matter how much anyone wishes it could be, but you do not have to struggle alone. Help is available through the Lord and His people. As a matter of fact, it has been my experience that it is impossible to do it alone.

And finally, if you have a family member, a friend, or a fellow worker trapped in homosexuality's ugly grip, they need you more than you will ever know. Do not reject them or turn your back on them. Simply show them the same love Jesus showed you when you were struggling.

The Bible says, “With God, all things are possible,” and in the words of Jesus, “They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick. I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance” (*Luke 5:31–32*).

## **APOSTLE PAUL, FORMER PHARISEE—A MURDERER AND PERSECUTOR OF CHRISTIANS**

1. Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou, art permitted to speak for thyself ... 2. ... I shall answer for myself this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews: 3. ... 4. ... from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem ... 5. ... that after the most, straightest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee. 6. And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers: 7. Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come ... 8. Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead? 9. I verily thought ... that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

10. Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them. 11. And I punished them oft in every synagogue and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities. 12. Whereupon as I went to Damascus with authority and commission from the chief priests, 13. At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining, round about me and them which journeyed with me. 14. And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. 15. And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. 16. But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; 17. Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, 18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are *sanctified by faith that is in me*. 19. Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision: 20. But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should *REPENT* and *TURN TO GOD*, and *DO WORKS* meet for repentance. 21. For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple and went about to kill me. 22. Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both too small and great, *saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come*: 23. That *CHRIST SHOULD \*SUFFER*, and that he should be *THE FIRST THAT SHOULD \*RISE FROM THE DEAD*, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles. 24. And as he thus spake for himself, *FESTUS SAID* with a loud voice, *PAUL, THOU ART* beside thyself; much learning doth make thee *MAD*. 25. But he said, *I AM NOT MAD*, most noble Festus; *BUT SPEAK FORTH THE WORDS OF TRUTH* and soberness. 26. For the

king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for *THIS THING WAS NOT DONE IN A CORNER*. 27. King Agrippa, *BELIEVEST THOU THE PROPHETS?* I know that thou believest. 28. Then *AGRIPPA* said unto Paul, *ALMOST, THOU PERSUADEST ME TO BE A CHRISTIAN*. 29. And Paul said, I would to God, that not only thou, but also all that hear me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds. 30. And when he had thus spoken, *THE KING* rose up, and *THE GOVERNOR*, and *BERNICE*, and they that sat with them: 31. And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, *THIS MAN DOETH NOTHING WORTHY OF DEATH OR OF BONDS*. 32. Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This, man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Caesar. (Acts 26:1–32)

### CORNELIUS—A DEVOUT MAN NEEDED CHRIST

Cornelius ... a *devout* man, and one that *feared God* with all his house, which *gave much* alms to the people, and *prayed to God always*. He saw in a vision evidently ... an angel of God ... saying ... ‘Thy prayers and thine alms *are come up for a memorial before God* ... now send men ... for ... Peter’ ... Peter said, ‘of a truth I perceive that *God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him. The word which God sent ... preaching peace by Jesus Christ ... you know ... published throughout all Judea ... how God anointed Jesus ... with the Holy Ghost and with power; who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him ... in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged on a tree. him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly ... to us ... after he rose from the dead ... He which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins*. While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word ... Peter, Can, any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received

the Holy Ghost as well as we? And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. (Acts 10:3–5, 34–36, 39, 40, 42–44, 46–48)

## APOSTLE PETER A FISHERMAN—NOW A FISHER OF MEN

1. Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers (“Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims.” 1 Pet. 2:11; “Here have we no continuing city.” Heb. 13:14; “For our conversation is in heaven.” Phil. 3:20) scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, 2. *Elect* according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through *sanctification* of the Spirit, unto *obedience* and *sprinkling* of the blood of Jesus Christ: *Grace* unto you, and *peace*, be *multiplied*. 3. Blessed be the *God and Father* of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to His *abundant mercy* hath *begotten us again* unto a *lively hope* by the *\*resurrection* of Jesus Christ from the *\*dead*, 4. To an *inheritance incorruptible*, and *undefiled*, and that *fadeth not away*, *reserved*, in heaven for you, 5. Who are *kept by the power of God through faith* unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. 6. Wherein ye *greatly rejoice*, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: 7. That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ: 8. *Whom having not seen, ye love*; in whom, though *now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory*: 9. *Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls*. (1 Pet. 1:1–9)

We do not need to see Jesus in the Eucharist. We do not need any Eucharistic miracles to prove Jesus is true. We do not need to see Jesus being re-offered on the altar at Mass to prove to us that Jesus loves us and wants to forgive us.

10. Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: 11. Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the *\*sufferings* of Christ, and



the glory that should follow. *12.* Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have *preached the \*gospel* unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into. *13.* Wherefore *gird up* the loins of your mind, *be sober*, and *hope* to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; *14.* As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: *15.* But as he which hath called you is *Holy*, so be ye *Holy* in all manner of conversation; *16.* Because it is written, *Be, ye Holy*; for I am *Holy*. *17.* And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:

*18.* Forasmuch as ye know that *YE WERE NOT REDEEMED WITH CORRUPTIBLE THINGS*, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; *19. BUT WITH THE PRECIOUS BLOOD OF CHRIST*, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: *20.* Who verily was *foreordained before the foundation of the world*, but was *MANIFEST IN THESE LAST TIMES FOR YOU*, *21.* Who by him do believe in God, that *\*raised* him up from the dead, and gave him glory; *THAT YOUR FAITH AND HOPE MIGHT BE IN GOD.* (1 Pet. 1:10–21)

No additional “saints,” no Blessed Virgin Mary, and no purgatory are needed. It is purely a matter of choice to either surrender your life to love and obey God or surrender your life to something or someone that cannot offer you forgiveness of sin or everlasting life.

*22.* Seeing *YE HAVE PURIFIED YOUR SOULS IN OBEYING THE TRUTH* through the Spirit *unto unfeigned love of the brethren*, *SEE THAT YE LOVE ONE ANOTHER* with a *pure heart* fervently: *23. BEING BORN AGAIN*, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, *BY THE WORD OF GOD*, which liveth and abideth forever. *24.* For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away: *25.* But *the word of the Lord endureth forever.*

And this is *THE WORD WHICH BY THE \*GOSPEL IS PREACHED UNTO YOU.* (1 Pet. 1:22–25)

## **JESUS’S—PARABLE OF THE PRODIGAL SON**

The parable may be read in Luke 15:11–32 and was also shared in Chapter One. A true conversion includes recognizing your sinfulness and unworthiness and God’s mercy and forgiveness.

## **ETHIOPIAN EUNUCH—READING GOD’S WORD—ASKED FOR HELP**

26. And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert. 27. And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship, 28. Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet. 29. Then the Spirit said unto Philip, go near, and join thyself to this chariot. 30. And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, *understandest* thou what thou *readest*? 31. And he said, How, can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him. 32. The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth: 33. In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his *\*life is taken* from the earth. 34. And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?

35. Then *PHILIP* opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and *PREACHED UNTO HIM JESUS.* 36. And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and *THE EUNUCH SAID, See, here is water; WHAT DOTH HINDER ME TO BE BAPTIZED?* 37. And *PHILIP SAID, IF THOU BELIEVEST WITH ALL THINE HEART, THOU MAYEST.*

And he answered and said, *I BELIEVE THAT JESUS CHRIST IS THE SON OF GOD.*

38. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both *PHILIP* and the eunuch; and he *BAPTIZED HIM.*  
39. And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that *THE EUNUCH* saw him no more: and he *WENT ON HIS WAY REJOICING.* (Acts 8:26–39)

Reading God’s Word, the scriptures, comes first, preaching Jesus and understanding comes second, believing “with all thine heart” that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, comes third, salvation and the Holy Spirit baptism is fourth, water baptism is fifth, and rejoicing in your salvation is sixth, which, with my experience, comes simultaneously with number four.

### **GOD PLANNED FOR OUR REDEMPTION — FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH**

*Satan* would bruise Jesus’s heel, but Jesus would crush *Satan*’s head.

*Many Scriptures* prophesied of this event.

An Old Testament sacrificial system was set up, to point people to Jesus’s sacrifice, as the Lamb of God. *Jesus came* when the time had been fulfilled for his sacrifice.

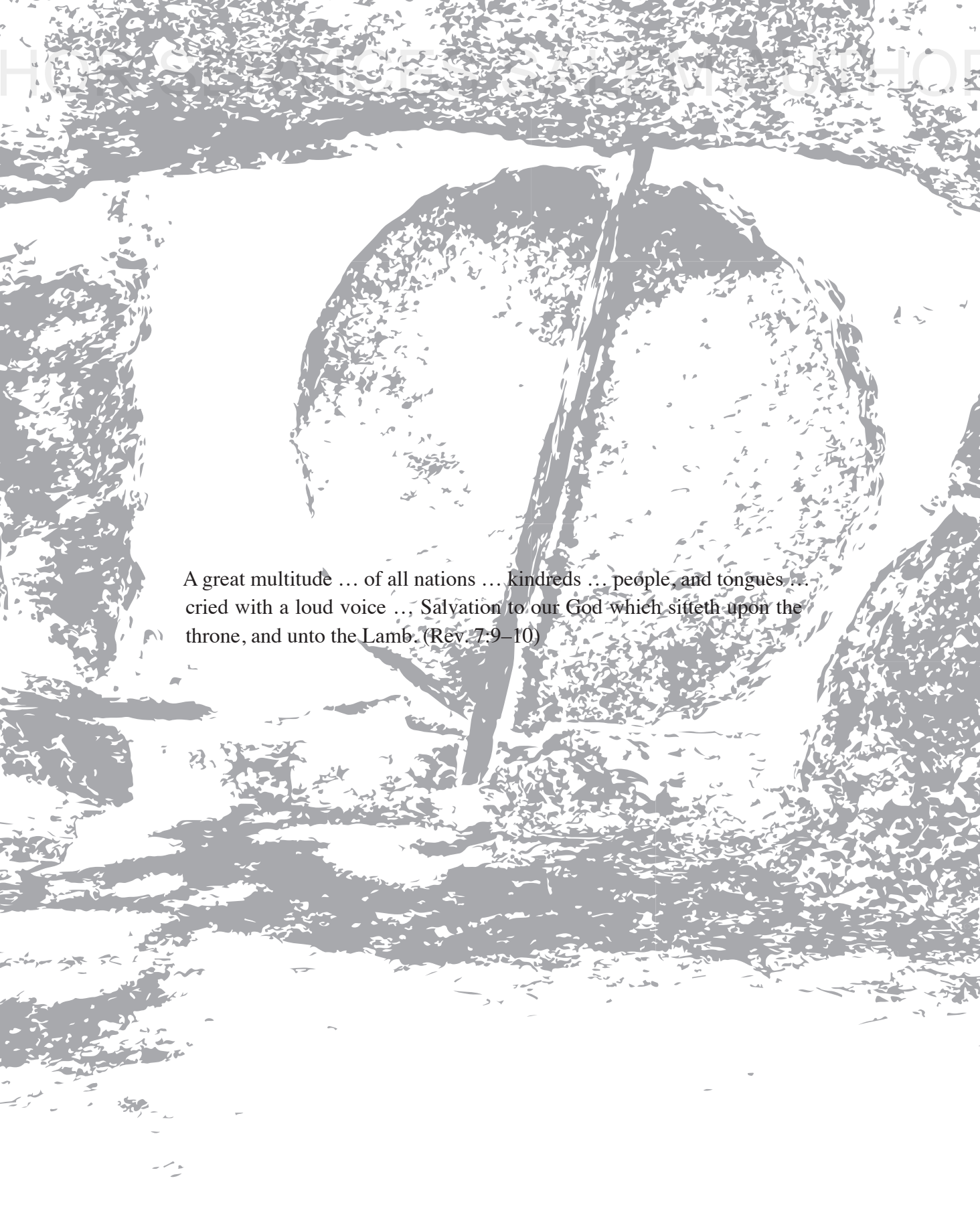
For *God* so loved the world, that he *gave his only begotten Son*, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.  
(John 3:16)

*The Lord is not slack* concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Pet. 3:9)

*Seek God*, read his word, that you may believe the truth of the message of the Cross; Jesus’s suffering, death, burial, and resurrection was for the payment and forgiveness of your sin.

1. Brethren, my heart's desire, and prayer, to God for *Israel* [*& Catholics*] is, that they might be saved. 2. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. 3. For they, being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. 4. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone that believeth. 5. For Moses describeth the righteousness, which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. 6. But the righteousness, which is of faith speaketh on this wise, say not in thine heart, Who, shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) 7. Or, Who, shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) 8. But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; 9. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. 11. For the scripture saith, whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. 12. For there is no difference between the *Jew*, [*& Catholic*] and the *Greek*: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. 13. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. 14. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? 15. And how shall they preach, except they be sent? *as it is written, How, beautiful are the feet of them that preach the \*gospel of peace and bring glad tidings of good things!* 16. But they have not all obeyed the *\*gospel*. For *Esaias* saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? 17. *So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.* (Rom. 10:1–17)

The Purpose of Jesus Christ is to give peace, forgiveness, a spiritual—joy, knowledge, assurance, the gift of everlasting life, strength, an eternal family with all the saints in heaven/earth and a Helper the Holy Spirit. Come all ye diverse and hell-bound sinners, repent, believe, receive forgiveness/eternal life, and be welcomed home into God's Family.



A great multitude ... of all nations ... kindreds ... people, and tongues ...  
cried with a loud voice ..., Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the  
throne, and unto the Lamb. (Rev. 7:9–10)



*Chapter Fourteen*

## ROME SWEET HOME AND CATHOLIC TESTIMONIES

**T**his chapter includes a variety of testimonies, true examples that express the new and the old views. Two are by nuns; the one a younger and the second a ninety-four, year old who expresses the hope of most, if not all, Catholics. There is John Wayne's death-bed conversion, who was encouraged to become a Catholic throughout his career.

There are several former Protestant leaders, pastors who converted, embracing Catholicism.

I have read where receiving the sacrament of penance was considered a conversion. I imagine this would be true in the Catholic sense since a person in mortal sin has lost his salvation and needs to be readmitted to full communion with *God* and the *Church*.

The book title below, *ROME SWEET HOME*, is a great example of how the Church is the focal point of the Catholic conversion.

Marcus C. Grodi wraps it up with his testimony and offer of help to assist seekers in their journey home to the Catholic Church.

***ROME SWEET HOME—A CONVERSION STORY.*** <sup>142</sup>

“Learn the joys and struggles faced by two devout Protestants as they each converted to Catholicism. In this moving account, the reader cannot escape learning the insights Dr. Hahn and Kimberly gained as they made their journey home. The discovery of new conceptions of God's covenant ... is just one of the gems the reader can mine from this sometimes painfully-candid, account of conversion and the effect it can have on today's families.” —*a book description, Catholic Answers, Shop Catholic*

**DEREK ROTTY —A LIFE OF CONVERSION** <sup>143</sup>

“An Invitation to Conversion.” Rotty is quick to point out that conversion is not a onetime event it is a lifelong process of becoming more like Christ.

“Many of us can look back at a specific point in our lives when we first encountered Jesus Christ and realized his plan for us. This has been true in my own life. When *I found the fullness of Christianity, the Catholic faith*, at the age of twenty-two, I thought I was all set. Was I ever wrong!”

He shares that while the Lord works on him, He is, “converting me every single day.” He states that, turning “toward the King, our King, every day” involves the mind and the heart. He doesn’t want to be misunderstood, “This is not easy. It takes effort to believe that ongoing conversion is necessary and possible. It takes a whole lot of patience before we see much measurable progress ... a life of conversion is eminently worth it ... full communion with the King of the universe!”

Rotty reveals that the practicality of this daily conversion involves the “reading, studying, and praying with Scripture, especially *the Gospels*.” He speaks about, Pontiff Emeritus Benedict XVI statement that “familiarity with Scripture will be key to a new spiritual springtime in the Church and the world.” Rotty again emphasizes that “the more we study *the Gospels*, the more we see that Jesus is constantly calling us to conversion, not just once, but again and again.” (*emphasis added*) —*A Life of Conversion, Meeting Christ in the Gospels*

**DEREK ROTTY—“SEEKING TRUTH, GOODNESS, & BEAUTY”** <sup>144</sup>

Rotty, in a more personable testimony shares, that his non-Catholic Christian home gave him the basics and the foundational doctrines and support that would make his future growth possible.

As a typical teenager he was more interested in worldly entertainments and pursuits than in religion. “I chose to pursue the things of the world and the flesh ... I was ... generally void of purity, humility, and charity.”

After years of pursuing his self-interest Rotty, began seeking truth and grew in his understanding, “I resolved to find truth and live by it, no matter where that might be.” His future wife, with her family helped answer his questions and “allowed me to understand that religion has an important role to play in the search for truth.”

“I began to retrace my religious upbringing ... I found my way home to the Catholic Church in 2004.”

From the beginning until now fourteen years later, with his eyes on the goal, Rotty has “been spurred on by the beauty of its worship ... historicity, and ... moral teachings.” He mentions, with joy, that the two great parts of his story are his Catholic faith and that “the woman who brought me to the doors of the Church said ‘Yes’ to my marriage proposal.”

Rotty has more to share concerning his continued conversion, “In hindsight, though, my reception into the Catholic Church was only the beginning of a much more important conversion:” — *derekrotty.com/story/*

**SISTER MARY JO SOBIECK—DOMINICAN “NUN WHO THREW FIRST PITCH:  
‘MY DREAM IS TO START A REVIVAL—WE ALL HAVE SOMETHING TO OFFER  
THE WORLD’”<sup>145</sup>**

She threw the first pitch for a Chicago White Sox game and is speaking to Jacqueline Burkepile, an Editor for ChurchPOP, July 16, 2019.

Mary Jo has received some so-called “fame” for this and uses this opportunity “to evangelize and bring awareness to vocations.” She talks about being a “person of faith,” the “youngest of ten” siblings and “the Holy Spirit works in mysterious ways.” Throwing this pitch was her opportunity, and she was going to do her best and “trust God will do the rest.”

Here are some of her notable comments concerning her faith, how God directs lives, and her testimony on being a Marian Catholic.



“This is about the community, about the Church, about Marian Catholic. It’s about hopefully inspiring people to want (to) pull up the potential within them to see ‘what’s possible for me?’ So that’s really what I hope it’s about.”

“If this is just an avenue for God to put out the message or the visibility of a religious sister, whether it’s on a baseball card or a bobble head ... if my image will communicate something of passion and desire to be good and holy and genuine, I’m all for it. I hope that’s what this is all about, really.”

“It’s important for me that I represent who God is, because for many of them (Marian High School sophomores and juniors), I’m going to be the closest thing that they experience of God.”

Mary Jo has students who at first were “resistant” but at the end of the year they would complement her.

“Sister, the way you teach—you’re so honest. *You allow us to just be who we are.*” (emphasis added)

“Recognize God is in all of it, even in our questions ... our doubts ... our fears ... anger and grief, all that stuff we want to blame God for—God understands and bears the burden of that. We’re going to work through it. If I can give people that kind of feeling, that wherever they are, they’re still loved by God, that’s the greatest thing I can do. Because that’s who God is. God embraces all of us where we are at any given time.”

“*It’s not about telling somebody something more to save them. It’s about bringing to the surface what’s already there and within them that has saved them, and helping them recognize it, and to live in freedom out of that.*” (emphasis added)

Mary Jo was approached by a gentleman after a first pitch, who shared:

“Sister, just keep doing what you’re doing because *if you can reach me and help me believe that there is still good in this Church, (emphasis added)* you’re doing a good thing.”

“Again, for me, it’s *inspiring people to just be themselves*. God doesn’t want you to be anything different. *God wants you to be you” (emphasis added)*.

When asked about keeping her humility through all the attention, *Mary Jo* replied:

“I recognize the value of being part of a team. I think *that’s what drew me to Religious Life (emphasis added)*. I’ve always been part of a team, and I know my role.” She gives credit to God, the influence of her parents, and the knowledge she learned when she was young to “Do unto others as you would have done unto you.”

*Mary Jo* was asked about her advice to those who might think they would miss out on their dreams if they entered a “vocation to the religious life.”

“If you feel a call ... first—recognize God has *a dream* for you ... When I felt the call to religious life—handing myself over—emptying myself—allowing God to fill me ... *If you allow God to direct your life, so much of what you dream for yourself and more will come to fruition ... God integrates them ... my dream right now is really to start a revival ... For my Church—community—world.” (emphasis added)*

“A revival [which starts] in people and families willing to give their children to the *Church*. People to give themselves to the *Church*. The *Church* is still relevant—credible ... still, as Pope Francis said, ‘a place to live joy.’ ... when people can go and live who they are unapologetically ... *Come as you are. God created you with gifts that the Church needs right now*. And it might be something a little bit different than it was in 1950 or 1980 ... *let’s create the Church, what it needs to be*. So that’s what I mean for revival for our community.” *(emphasis added)*

Mary Jo would like “to inspire new vocations” which may look unorthodox.

“Jesus was unorthodox. That’s the reason he was crucified. He didn’t fit the mold of a leader. So, we’re in good company when that’s who we are ... *let’s make the Church what we want it to be and what it needs to be. But we need people’s help.*” (emphasis added)

Mary Jo was asked about holiness and explained, she read something about holiness fifteen or twenty years ago.

“Holiness isn’t about being somebody else. It’s not about reaching a certain ideal of all the right things. Holiness is about being who you were created to be. So, number one, we ... take-a-look at who we are and accept who we are. And that our call to religious life isn’t out of who we are, it’s to *be (emphasis added)* who we are ... Enter religious life and allow the life to transform you to become who you were, the more you were created to be. It starts from accepting who we are.”

Then she shares from that point, God will bring you to being perfect:

“As your heavenly father is perfect.”

Mary Jo simplifies what perfection is for us.

*Number One:*

“It’s accepting ourselves and our call to be our true selves. That’s holiness. And when we can live our true freedom, that’s when we’re the most holy.”

*Number Two:*

“Prayer. Prayer is key. To go sit in a *Church in front of the Blessed Sacrament* (the Eucharist) (emphasis added). To put a crucifix in front of you in the morning and just gaze on Christ. To have an image of Jesus. The rosary is a big one for me and the Dominicans, and my mother. That mantra of just calling upon the Spirit.”

Mary Jo’s final points in coming together to reach the light.

“I pray for our world, that when we see the devastation, destruction and the upheaval in nature and the violence—If you look over the course of history, in those moments, from that comes a new *Enlightenment* ... so we have to go through these moments of darkness to get to the light. I believe now is the time *our Church, our World, in our own Lives* when we ... address that and not resist it, but persist in it, trusting that it will lead us to the light. *So, the more we can come together in doing that as a collective, the more it will happen.*” (emphasis added) —ChurchPOP Editor

*Mary Jo’s* testimony is unique, interesting, and true to the Catholic faith. It did not sound like she believed in a personal, free-will life decision to receive God’s gift of everlasting life. I hope she knows that *Jesus* is the “Light” we all should be seeking and following. Some may find some earthly pursuit to supposedly fill that void and give them joy, but only *Jesus* can give joy eternally.

Holiness is to be sinless and having a selfless love for God and neighbor.

Christians are created to be and are meant to be like Christ serving in their spiritual gift/gifts.

#### “THE TESTIMONY OF HELEN BUSCARINO,” OSF—A FRANCISCAN NUN: <sup>146</sup>

She had many opportunities to help others “and she used every one of those chances to make someone else’s world better. She admits she had selfish motives.

‘I’m going to stand before God and I want to make sure I get a good report ... Knowing my nature, my impulsiveness, I wanted to make sure I made it up to heaven.’ —Patrick J. Buechi, *WNY Catholic*

#### “HERE ARE 10 OF THE MOST UNEXPECTED CATHOLIC CONVERSION STORIES”—SARA AND JUSTIN KRAFT <sup>147</sup>

##### # 2. *John Wayne*

Wayne grew up a Presbyterian, however the mothers of his children raised all seven of them in the faith of the Catholic Church.

In agony on his death bed suffering from stomach cancer, “A priest was called, and Wayne was *baptized*, and the priest administered *last rites*.” When night had fallen, “Wayne fell into a coma. ‘I don’t know the technicalities of the Church or what constitutes a conversion,’ said son Michael. ‘But Dad did die in the Church.’”

“(Priest) Munoz, Wayne’s grandson, said that his grandfather expressed a degree of regret about not becoming a Catholic earlier in life—blaming ‘a busy life.’

“From Wayne’s example, we should learn that it is never too late to embrace God’s forgiveness. We should not allow a busy life to keep us from a personal relationship with Jesus Christ. Receiving the sacraments and especially weekly Mass attendance can help foster that relationship.”  
—*The Mystical Humanity of Christ Publishing, Cora Evans*



Dear Gary,

Are you praying for someone you know and love to become Catholic?

**MARCUS C. GRODI—“THE COMING HOME NETWORK INTERNATIONAL”  
—MINISTRY SOLICITATION LETTER—GARY WESTGERDES—JANUARY  
OF 2020.** <sup>148</sup>

“God opened my heart to understand the importance of receiving Christ in the Eucharist.”

Grodi offers a CD, “John 6:53, Symbolic or Literal?”

Grodi, shares his conversion testimony.

“I’m Marcus Grodi, a former Protestant minister who came home to the Catholic Church 27 years ago. You may know me from my television show, *The Journey Home*, which is now in its 22<sup>nd</sup> season on EWTN.

“In 1993, convinced by the claims of the Catholic Church, I stepped down from my position as a Presbyterian minister and entered full communion with the Catholic Church.

“At the time, I was a young father, with a wife and little ones. For me, becoming Catholic meant losing my only means of supporting my wife and children. It also meant losing the support of friends and our church community.”

Grodi shares the difficult journey that three convert seekers experienced:

A Protestant minister ... “He was fired on the spot” when his senior pastor heard from a congregant about his interest in becoming a Catholic.

A Lutheran minister was convinced that he “needed to become a Catholic” because of his views concerning communion but upon going to a local Catholic parish he was told, “*Since Vatican II, you no longer need to convert. You should stay where you are.*” (*emphasis added*)

An Evangelical Christian, she “desperately wanted to become Catholic” but her husband did not want anything to do with Catholicism.

For these three instances, “Fortunately ... the CHNetwork was there.”

They helped the Protestant minister find work. The Lutheran minister received, “clear guidance about becoming Catholic.” The Evangelical Christian was befriended by CHN staff and members “as she figured how to become Catholic and save her marriage.”

“Each had reached a turning point. God was calling them home to the Catholic Church, and He was giving them the grace to come home. *But*

*they almost missed that moment of grace. They almost said no. What made the difference? The CHNetwork and the contributions of faithful Catholics.” (emphasis added)*

“A Work of Grace, for 26 years, the CHNetwork team and I have done everything we can to *make sure that nobody who comes to us misses that moment of grace. Our partners ... Catholics like you who want everyone to experience the fullness of faith found in the Catholic Church.” (emphasis added)*

Sincerely Yours in Christ Our Savior,  
Marcus C. Grodi, President/Founder

Depending on the amount of your gift you may choose the CD, a booklet—*What Must I Do to Be Saved?* and a book of 30 conversion stories—*Journeys Home*.

Coming Home Network International—Purpose

“To help non-Catholic Christians, clergy and laity, discover the truth and beauty of Catholicism and to make the journey home.”

## **A SUMMARY OF: THE JOURNEY HOME, CATHOLICISM’S GOSPEL—SACRAMENTS**

Water Baptism = New Birth.

Confession to a Priest = Daily Conversion.

Eucharist/Mass Sacrifice = Daily Forgiveness of Sin. (CCC-1366)

Anointing of the Sick = Based on Personal Holiness.

Heaven = Eternal Life.

Purgatory = Purging of Temporal Punishment Owed for Sin—Eternal Life.

Misappropriation of the Sacraments = Self Pays for All Punishment Owed for Sin—Eternal Death.

Devotions to the Blessed Virgin Mary, Co-redemptrix = Spiritual help, Salvation, escape from Purgatory—Eternal Life.

## **THE JOURNEY HOME, BIBLICAL GOSPEL—FAITH IN JESUS CRUCIFIED**

Repentance, Confession of Sin, Faith, Holy Spirit = Salvation—Eternal Life seated with Christ in Heaven.

Holy Spirit Baptism = Spiritual New Birth, New Creation, Permanently Sealed, and Gifted to Serve.

Believers Water Baptism = Proclaims Spiritual New Birth and Resurrection.

Confession for Sins of the Flesh = God's Immediate Merciful Forgiveness.

Communion = Represents Jesus Sacrifice for our Sins and our Unified Commitment to bring Christ's Gospel, the Message of the Cross—Jesus Crucified, to the Ends of the Earth.

Anointing of the Saints = Daily Guidance from the Holy Spirit.

Death/Absent from the Body = Present with the Lord (2 Cor. 5:8) —Eternal Life in Heaven with Christ face to face.







## Chapter Fifteen

# A FINAL LOOK, ONLY ONE CAN BE RIGHT

The following are my renditions when considering the information gleaned from the two gospels.

### ***BIBLICAL GOSPEL***

By Jesus's death, burial, and resurrection, the keys of heaven, he became the Door to heaven. All who enter heaven must go through him. *Jesus is the way.*

### ***CATHOLICISM'S GOSPEL***

By Jesus's death and resurrection, he has opened heaven's door and given the Church via Peter the keys of heaven. *The Church is the way.*

### ***BIBLICAL GOSPEL***

Jesus is the Word of God made flesh; spiritually speaking; we must eat Jesus's flesh, the Word of God. How do we do this? By reading/studying, God's word and carrying on Jesus's work of preaching salvation through his name. What are the words of God? The scriptures written by Moses, the prophets and apostles under the guidance and inspiration of God the Holy Spirit. Jesus came to personally bring us the truth of God and to preach and explain the purpose of his coming. Jesus came with the truth and he declared that he, *Jesus, is the truth.*

### ***CATHOLICISM’S GOSPEL***

Jesus is the Eucharist, physically speaking, under the appearance of bread and wine. We eat Jesus’s flesh, blood, soul, and divinity. During the Mass, Jesus’s body and blood offered on the Cross is united with the Church’s offering. This one offering then is made to God to help take away the sins of the world. This is an unbloody visible act to help Catholics see the truth and benefits of Christ’s sacrifice. Our truth comes equally from scripture and tradition. *The Church is the Truth.*

### ***BIBLICAL GOSPEL***

The faith that grows and is cultivated through this study of truth, God’s Word, brings us to a choice: do we want to follow Jesus or turn away? Some choose to turn away; some choose to follow. Those who choose to follow receive God’s gift of everlasting life. They are spiritually born again, through the baptism of the Holy Spirit. They also, just as importantly, are sealed by the Holy Spirit as a child of God and are given a spiritual gift to minister to the church and to bring the gospel of Christ to the world. Though you are dead in sin, through faith in Jesus’s sacrificial death on the cross, you can and, if you so freely choose, you will receive new life. Because of this, *Jesus is the life.*

### ***CATHOLICISM’S GOSPEL***

The Catholic Church has been the One True Church since the first Pentecost recorded in Acts or even the First Mass and celebration of the Eucharist at the Last Supper. God wants all of mankind to be a part of the One True Catholic Church. This is accomplished through the explicit or implicit reception of the Catholic Sacrament of Baptism. Those who are ignorant of the truth and sacraments of the Church may be saved or welcomed by loving God the best they know how. For those who do, it may be supposed or implied that if they had known it was necessary to

receive Roman Catholic baptism they would have willingly and freely done so. Because of this, the *Church is the life*.

### ***A BIBLICAL INVITATION***

*Come, join the Church of the redeemed, be a temple of the living God. For Jesus does not dwell in holy places made with man's hands. He dwells in the bodies, souls, and hearts of those he created who have recognized their sinfulness, and who are, with their whole heart, seeking forgiveness and who by faith have freely chosen to lose their life to follow Jesus.*

### **WESTGERDES EXPLAINS**

The Catholic Church has their Catechism with quotes that go back centuries from early leaders, councils, and Church-established saints.

It is taught that The Catholic Catechism contains the Way, the Truths, and the Life of Jesus's established Church, the One True Religion, as seen in, (CCC-2104, 2105).

Catholicism's new life is *not assured*. You must *persevere* in good works and obedience to the Church and avoid sin/mortal sin.

For Catholics, salvation can only be achieved through the Church. Everyone should be a part of the Church. The Sacraments are how God's grace is dispensed. Catholics encourage, *Come, join us as we celebrate the Eucharist, "The Highway to Heaven."* *Enjoy Catholicism.*

### ***A CATHOLIC INVITATION***

Come join the Catholic Church, we are over a billion strong. We have the successors to Peter, the first Church, the mysteries of the Sacraments and *Eucharist*, the saints, the Church Fathers, *Mary*, and the long history of maturing in our knowledge of God through the scriptures and tradition. *Come, experience the riches of Catholicism.*

## SOME CLOSING THOUGHTS AND COMMENTS TO PONDER.

“An authentic interpretation of the word of God ... has been entrusted to ... *The Church Alone*” (CCC-85). (*emphasis added*)

Yea let *God* be true, but every man a liar. (Rom. 3:4)

“I have more respect for the devil than for some preachers I have met; the devil believes the Bible is the Word of God!” —**Billy Sunday**

These were more noble ... they received the word with all readiness of mind, and *searched the scriptures daily*, whether those things were so. Therefore, many of them believed. (Acts 17:11–12)

“Cardinal tells Catholics who protest Pope to become Protestants” — directed to Catholic Journalist. —*Jules Gomes, Church Militant*.<sup>149</sup>

“Our Protestant brethren have neither the pope nor the bishop—everyone makes his own choices. I told someone they could make the choice of becoming Protestant if you don’t like the Catholic Church, if this boat is too narrow.” —**Cardinal Gualtiero Bassetti**

A journalist and deacon responded:

“This isn’t about a personality clash (“of ‘liking’ or ‘disliking’ Pope Francis”) but about Catholic journalists who love the Church—sometimes at great personal cost—holding to account powerful prelates who are destroying the Church’s communion by promoting false teachings.” —**Nick Donnelly**

I believe the term “communion” in the above quote pertains to the coming together as one body and not the sacrifice of the mass. The false teachings could be in relation to social, ecumenical, or traditional doctrinal/practicing issues.

“Attendance at mass each Sunday is a requirement of Catholics?”<sup>150</sup>

“Yes, it is. A Catholic who does not attend Mass each Sunday is committing *a mortal sin* and needs to go to confession.” (*emphasis added*) —Wiki User, Answers.com

“Where in the Bible does it require weekly attending of the Mass?”<sup>151</sup>

“The ‘Mass’ ... Over time ... became more formulized and ritualized and included readings from Scripture. As more time passed ... enthusiasm waned ... So, the Church imposed a rule obligating Christians to attend Mass at least on Sunday ... The obligation to attend Mass on Sunday is *a Church law*, not a Divine commandment like the 10 commandments.” (*emphasis added*) —Priest Joe Scott, *Busted Halo*

Jesus: I am the good shepherd ... I lay down *my* life for the sheep (Jews). And other sheep I have (Gentiles), which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear *my* voice; and there shall be *onefold, and one shepherd*. (John 10:14–16)

*And they sung a new song ... for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation ... Worthy is the Lamb that was slain ... And every creature ... in heaven ... on the earth ... under the earth ... in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto the Lamb for ever and ever.* (Rev. 5:9, 12–13)

**KING DAVID PRAYED FOR GOD’S FORGIVENESS. YOU CAN DO THE SAME, ALONG WITH YOUR FAITH IN JESUS.**

*Have mercy on me, O God, according to thy loving kindness: According unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions. Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin ... Wash me and I shall be whiter than snow ... Hide thy face from my sins and blot out all mine iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.* (Ps. 51:1–2, 7, 9–10)

Just a glimpse, from a five-page solicitation letter sent to Westgerdes from *Catholic Answers*, September 9, 2019.

“It’s All About Saving Souls”

“Catholic Answers has the knowledge, the materials, the projects, the programs, and, most importantly, the staff to help *convert people to the Catholic faith (emphasis added)* . . . or bring them back when they’ve gone astray. We just don’t have the money it takes to keep all, of our work going at the pace the crises in the Church and the world demand. And that is why we’re turning to you now.”

Some Catholic and Protestant ministries, organizations, churches, and denominations may come and go, but *Jesus is always the only steady anchor for the soul* (see Heb. 6:19). Convert and follow Jesus today.

“Step Three: The Wrath of God—His Righteous Judgment.”<sup>152</sup>

“You wouldn’t expect to see judgment as a principle of gaining and celebrating victory, but it is. We gain victory when we know not one sin will ever go unpunished . . . Every sin will be punished. The only question is: who’s going to bear that punishment? Your sin will be pardoned in Christ or punished in Hell, but it will never be overlooked. No one’s ever is.

“In His righteous judgment, God puts the final period on the final page of history.” —*Adrian Rodgers, Love Worth Finding*

This passage is always worth repeating, Jesus calls to the world, all of humanity, and to whosoever will, “Come.”

*Come unto me*, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and *learn of me*; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall *find rest unto your souls*. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light. (Matt. 11:28–30)

*Jesus the Word of God, Jesus the Word of God made flesh, Jesus the risen Christ, Jesus the Amen. Jesus he is coming again. Jesus says, be ready!*



May God Bless You,  
Our Love and Prayers,  
Seated *in Christ*, by Faith,  
Gary and Victoria Westgerdes  
The last KJV Bible verse to mention the word—  
*Cross, Saviour, Amen.*

Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him endured the *Cross*, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. (Heb. 12:2)

Looking for that blessed hope, and glorious appearing of the great God and our *Saviour* Jesus Christ. (Titus 2:13)

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. *Amen.* (Rev. 22:21)





## NOTES

1. catholicexchange.com
2. Dominican friars. Accessed 10/11/2019. [Dominicanfriars.org/about/our-mission/](http://Dominicanfriars.org/about/our-mission/).
3. Lighthouse Trails. Accessed 2/22/2020. [https://www.lighthouse trailsresearch.com/blog/?page\\_id=2](https://www.lighthouse trailsresearch.com/blog/?page_id=2).
4. Our Sunday Visitor, 2017.
5. Fulton J Sheen, biography. Accessed 10/13/2019. [Britannica.com/biography/Fulton-J-Sheen](http://Britannica.com/biography/Fulton-J-Sheen).
6. St. Tereasa of Avila, Catholic School. Accessed 10/4/2019. <https://www.stteresaschoolwarriors.com/our-patron-saint.html>.
7. The Catholic Answer. Accessed 11/19/2018. [www.osv.com](http://www.osv.com).
8. Gary Westgerdes, Founder of The Keys of Heaven Ministries. [www.thekeysofheaven.com](http://www.thekeysofheaven.com).
9. Priest Vincent Serpa O.P., “Q & A, What Is the Sin of Presumption?” *Catholic Answers*, Accessed 4/13/2020. <https://www.catholic.com/qa/what-is-the-sin-of-presumption>.
- Priest Charles Grondin, “Q & A, The Sin of Presumption” *Catholic Answers*, Accessed 3/16/2020. <https://www.catholic.com/qa/the-sin-of-presumption>.
10. Gary Westgerdes, “Gary Testimony,” *zumachurch*, August 10, 2009, Accessed 3/13/2020. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=C4JPnKSaiW0>.
11. Paul Thigpen, “Are You Saved? A Catholic Response to a Common Protestant Question,” *The Coming Home Network*, July 5, 2017. Accessed 2/22/2020. <https://chnetwork.org/2017/07/05/saved-catholic-response-common-protestant-question/>.

12. Priest Ray Ryland, Ph.D., J.D., “Explaining Catholicism,” *The Catholic Answer*, Magazine, Vol. 25, No. 3, July/August 2011, 13–14.
13. Accessed 2/22/2020. <https://forums.catholic.com/t/ignorant-question-no-1-why-does-our-lord-jesus-still-suffer-for-us/233730>.
14. Priest Ray Ryland, Ph.D., J.D., “Are Muslims and Protestants Saved?,” *The Catholic Answer*, Magazine, Vol. 25, No. 4, September/October 2011, 28–29.
15. Timothy P. O’Malley, “Opening the Word: The true presence in the Eucharist is the foundation for the clergy,” *Our Sunday Visitor*, June 6, 2019. Accessed 3/16/2020. <https://osvnews.com/2019/06/06/the-true-presence-in-the-eucharist-is-the-foundation-for-the-clergy/>.
16. About Catholics Team, “Catholic Assurance of Salvation,” *About Catholics*, Accessed 3/16/2020. <http://www.aboutcatholics.com/beliefs/catholic-assurance-of-salvation/>.
17. Dave Hunt, “TOP 25 Quotes,” *A-Z Quotes*, Accessed 3/17/2020. [https://www.aquotes.com/author/38251-Dave\\_Hunt](https://www.aquotes.com/author/38251-Dave_Hunt)
18. Baptist Church Believer/Saint, “Prayed the Sinner’s Prayer,” [www.lwf.org](http://www.lwf.org)
19. Devin Rose, “Fourteen Holy Helpers Novena,” *Pray Catholic Novenas*, Accessed 3/17/2020. <https://catholicnovenaapp.com/novenas/fourteen-holy-helpers-novena/#>
20. Priest Mitch Pacwa, S.J., “Scripture and Tradition, EWTN youtube.com,” *SAVED, A Bible Study Guide for Catholics*, Aired, 2019/01/15, Accessed 3/17/2020. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XSHUYF-7GIk>.
21. A Catholic Response, Inc., “Salvation: Assurance or Hope? Are you saved?,” *Catholic News Agency*, Accessed 12/22/2019. <https://www.catholicnewsagency.com/resources/apologetics/salvation/salvation-assurance-or-hope-are-you-saved>.
22. About Catholics Team, “Catholic Assurance of Salvation,” *About Catholics*, Accessed 12/22/2019. [www.aboutcatholics.com/beliefs/catholic-assurance-of-salvation/](http://www.aboutcatholics.com/beliefs/catholic-assurance-of-salvation/).
23. Francine Bay – Hengiing Zang, *Stories of the Blessed Sacrament*, pg. 27, Original French edition: *Les belles histoires de ma communion* © 2018 by Mame, Paris, © 2019 by MAGNIFICANT, New York – Ignatius Press, San Francisco.

24. About Catholics Team, “Catholic Assurance of Salvation.” *About Catholics*,” Accessed 12/22/2019. [www.aboutcatholics.com/beliefs/catholic-assurance-of-salvation/](http://www.aboutcatholics.com/beliefs/catholic-assurance-of-salvation/).
  25. Ibid.
  26. Priest Francis Hoffman, J.C.D., “Becoming a Good Catholic,” *The Catholic Answer Magazine*, Volume 26, No.2, May/June 2012, 26–27.
  27. Priest Paul Thomas, “My Ticket to Heaven,” *Catholic League, For Religious and Civil Rights*, October 17, 1993, 8–10. Accessed 12/30/2019. <https://www.catholicleague.org/free-tickets-to-heaven/>.
  28. A Wiley Brand, “Mortal and Venial Sins in the Catholic Church,” *dummies*, Accessed 2/3/2020. <https://www.dummies.com/religion/christianity/catholicism/mortal-and-venial-sins-in-the-catholic-church/>.
- Priest David Nix, “15 Mortal Sins Catholics Are Frequently Missing in Their Confessions,” *Pilgrim Priest*, August 3, 2019. Accessed 4/24/2020. <https://padreperegrino.org/2019/08/mortalsins/>.
29. Hannah Brockhaus | Source: CNA, “Devotion to Mary is a must,” *Catholic.net*, Accessed 1/5/2020. [catholic.net/op/articles/4306/devotion-to-mary-is-a-must.html](http://catholic.net/op/articles/4306/devotion-to-mary-is-a-must.html).
  30. Traditional Catholic Femininity, “Devotion to Mary, Model of Femininity,” *tradcatfem.com*, Posted June 19, 2017. Accessed 2/22/2020. <https://tradcatfem.com/2017/06/19/devotion-to-mary-model-of-femininity/>.
  31. The Berean Call, [www.thebereancall.com](http://www.thebereancall.com).
  32. Brandon Showalter, “China hearing gospel via Africa; church growing amid brutal persecution,” *The Christian Post*, February 17, 2019. Accessed 2/17/19. <https://www.christianpost.com/news/china-hearing-gospel-via-africa-church-growing-amid-brutal-persecution.html>.
- Christopher Rhodes, “How Africa is converting China,” *UnHerd*, February 13, 2019. Accessed 4/15/2020. <https://unherd.com/2019/02/how-africa-is-converting-china/>.

33. Douglas M. Beaumont, “Can We Know That We Have Eternal Life?” *Catholic Answers*, 12/17/2018. Accessed 3/13/2020. <https://www.catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/can-we-know-that-we-have-eternal-life>.
- “Can We Know We Have Eternal Life (1 John 5:13)?” *douglasbeaumont.com*, April 18, 2016. Accessed 4/15/2020. <https://douglasbeaumont.com/2016/04/18/can-we-know-we-have-eternal-life-1-john-513/>.
34. Another Look, “Our History” *Paulist Evangelization Ministries*, Accessed 3/17/2020. <http://www.pemdc.org/about-us/our-history/>.
35. About Catholics Team, “The Role of the Catechism of the Catholic Church,” *About Catholics*, Accessed 3/23/2020. <https://www.aboutcatholics.com/beliefs/the-role-of-the-catechism-of-the-catholic-church/>.
36. King James Bible, “As It Is Written, search,” *King James Bible Online*, Accessed 12/23/2019. <https://www.kingjamesbibleonline.org/search.php?q=as+it+is+written&bsec=N&order=0>.
- Authorized Version Publications*, Accessed 12/24/2019. [www.avpublications.com](http://www.avpublications.com).
- Chick Publications*. Accessed 12/24/2019. <https://www.chick.com/information/article?id=quick-comparison-of-bible-versions>.
37. New Advent, *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, Accessed 4/22/2020. <https://www.newadvent.org/cathen/03449a.htm>. Accessed 4/22/2020. <https://www.newadvent.org/fathers/0109.htm>.
38. Wikipedia, “Extra Ecclesiam nulla salus,” *Wikipedia, The Free Encyclopedia*, Accessed 2/25/2020. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Extra\\_Ecclesiam\\_nulla\\_salus](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Extra_Ecclesiam_nulla_salus). Accessed 2/25/2020. [https://www.azquotes.com/author/18318-Irenaeus\\_of\\_Lyons](https://www.azquotes.com/author/18318-Irenaeus_of_Lyons).
39. Accessed 3/23/2020. [www.INSIDETHEVATICAN.COM](http://www.INSIDETHEVATICAN.COM)./ 1–800–789–9494, Robert B. Moynihan, PH.D.; Yann Peze, M.D., “Why is the Pope so important?” *Quora*, August 28, 2018. Accessed 4/25/2020. <https://www.quora.com/Why-is-the-Pope-so-important>.
40. Accessed 12/10/2019. [https://aleteia.org/slideshow/slideshow-here-are-10-official-titles-of-pope-francis-and-their-meaning/?from\\_post=430852](https://aleteia.org/slideshow/slideshow-here-are-10-official-titles-of-pope-francis-and-their-meaning/?from_post=430852).

41. Trent Horn, “Why We’re Catholic: Our Reasons for Faith, Hope, And Love,” *Shop Catholic*, Accessed 3/17/2020. <https://shop.catholic.com/why-were-catholic-our-reasons-for-faith-hope-and-love/>.
42. Priest Ray Ryland, PhD, JD., “What is Absolutely Necessary,” *The Catholic Answer Magazine*, November/December, Volume 26, No. 5, 21.
43. Priest Robert J. Hater, PhD., Advertisement: “Gateways to God: Celebrating the Sacraments,” *Catholic Answers Magazine*. May/June 2012, Volume 26, No. 2, 23.
44. Scott P. Richert, ‘No Guarantees: Why Parents Must Pray like St. Monica,’ *The Countermarch/Our Sunday Visitor*, Aug. 30, 2019. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://countermarch.org/articles/no-guarantees-why-parents-must-pray-like-st-monica>.
45. Peggy Frye, “Why Is Acts 8:37 Omitted from Many Bible Translations?,” *Catholic Answers Q&A*, Accessed 12/14/2019. <https://www.catholic.com/qa/why-is-acts-837-omitted-from-many-bible-translations>.
46. Steven D. Greydanus “If Non-Catholics Can Be Saved, Why Evangelize? It’s Complicated,” *National Catholic Register*, Accessed 3/18/2019. <http://www.ncregister.com/blog/steven-greydanus/if-non-catholics-can-be-saved-why-evangelize>.
47. Alan Schreck, “Can Non-Christians Be Saved?,” *Catholic & Christian*, October 1989, 27–28.
48. Editorial, “Obsolete sacrament?” *Our Sunday Visitor*, March 27, 2011, 19. Accessed 3/14/2020. <https://cara.georgetown.edu/reconciliation.pdf>.
49. Michael W. Chapman, “Survey: Only 24% of Catholic Women attend Mass Weekly,” January 17, 2018, *CNSNews*, Accessed 2/12/2020. <https://www.cnsnews.com/news/article/michael-w-chapman/survey-53-pre-vatican-ii-catholic-women-attend-mass-weekly>.
50. Dogmatic Constitution on the Church, Solemnly Promulgated by His Holiness Pope Paul VI, “LUMEN GENTIUM,” *Our Lady’s Warriors*, November 21, 1964. Accessed 3/18/2020. <https://www.ourladywarriors.org/teach/lumegent.htm>.

51. Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D. *The Seven Sacraments*, 1978. Catholic Book Publishing Co., NY, No. 278, pp. 15–19, 24.
52. Matt Dunn, “The Prominence and Placement of Tabernacles Explained,” *Ascension*, July 18, 2018. Accessed 2/6/2020. <https://media.ascensionpress.com/2018/07/18/the-prominence-and-placement-of-tabernacles-explained/>.
53. Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik S.V.D., *The Holy Eucharist*, © 1986 by Catholic Book Publishing Corp., N.J., pp. 31, 32.
54. Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D. *My Picture Missal*, Catholic Book Publishing; English translations © 1969 International Committee on English in the Liturgy, Inc. 1979 Copyright by Catholic Book Publishing Co., NY, pp. 23, 24
55. Patrice Fagnant-MacArthur, “Why the Sign of Peace is Important,” *Spiritual Woman*, March 21, 2011. Accessed 12/19/2019. <https://spiritualwomantoughts.blogspot.com/2011/03/why-sign-of-peace-is-important.html>.
56. Pope Benedict XVI, “Quotes About Eucharist,” *AZ QUOTES*, Accessed 3/18/2020. [https://www.azquotes.com/author/1201-Pope\\_Benedict\\_XVI/tag/eucharist](https://www.azquotes.com/author/1201-Pope_Benedict_XVI/tag/eucharist).
57. ChurchPOP Editor, “70% of Catholics Do Not Believe in Jesus’s Real Presence in the Eucharist, New Study Finds.” *ChurchPOP*, August 7, 2019. Accessed 3/18/2020. <https://churchpop.com/2019/08/07/new-study-finds-70-of-u-s-catholics-do-not-believe-in-jesus-real-presence-in-the-eucharist/>
58. Tom Nash, “Renewal Must Be Christ-Centered” *Catholic Answers Magazine*, 30th Anniversary Issue, January–February 2020, Volume 30 | Number 1, 8.
59. Priest Hugh Barbour, “A Priest’s Most Important Job,” *Catholic Answers Magazine*, March–April 2018, Volume 28, Number 2, 8.
60. USCCB, Monsignor William P. Fay, General Secretary, “The Real Presence of Jesus Christ in the Sacrament of the Eucharist: Basic Questions and Answers,” *United States Conference of Catholic Bishops*, June 2001. Accessed 3/13/2020. <http://www.usccb.org/prayer-and-worship/the-mass/order-of-mass/liturgy-of-the-eucharist/the-real-presence-of-jesus-christ-in-the-sacrament-of-the-eucharist-basic-questions-and-answers.cfm>. Introduction 3rd and 4th paragraphs.

61. Mark C. McCann, “To the Ends of the Earth: Action,” *Our Sunday Visitor*, Amazon Promo, February 2, 2019.
62. Benedict, “The Power of Eucharistic Preaching,” *Daily Rosary Family*, December 21, 2018. Accessed 3/18/2020. <https://dailyrosaryfamily.com/the-power-of-eucharistic-preaching/>.
63. Douglas M. Beaumont, “Is Transubstantiation Unbelievable?” *Catholic Answers Magazine*, July–August 2019, Volume 29 | Number 4, 4. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://www.catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/is-transubstantiation-unbelievable>.
64. Francine M. O’Connor, “The Real Thing is Better,” *The ABC’s of the Mass ... for children*, Copyright © 1988, Liguori Publications, 20–21.
65. dberns, “Why does the priest add that small drop of water with the wine at consecration?” *Questions from Religion Class*, LaPlace, Louisiana, United States, 9/23/2009. Accessed 1/18/2020. <https://questionsfromreligionclass.blogspot.com/2009/09/why-does-priest-add-drop-of-water-to.html>.
66. Matthew Belklo, “Francis Chan and his dream of a Eucharist rooted in the Early Church,” *Aleteia*, Jan. 20, 2020. Accessed 3/14/2020. <https://aleteia.org/2020/01/20/francis-chan-and-his-dream-of-a-eucharist-rooted-in-the-early-church/>.
67. Editor @ Parishworld.net, Matthew Warner, “350,000 Catholic Masses a day! Now This is Communion,” *For Catholic Holy Mass*, August 31, 2010. Accessed 12/01/2019. [for catholic holymass.blogspot.com/2010/08/now-this-is-communion.htm](http://for catholic holymass.blogspot.com/2010/08/now-this-is-communion.htm).
68. Christianity Stack Exchange, “Is every single minute of the year a mass being celebrated in the Roman Catholic Church? If so, since when?”, May 7, 2017. Accessed 12/02/2019. <https://christianity.stackexchange.com/questions/56698/is-every-single-minute-of-the-year-a-mass-being-celebrated-in-the-roman-catholic>.
69. Rev. Msgr. Charles E. Pope, “Purgatory for All?” *The Catholic Answers*, Sept/Oct 2016, Vol. 30, No. 4, 22.
70. Paul Todd, “No Salvation Bargains,” *The Daily Standard*, Celina Ohio; February or March 1982.



71. “Introduction to Indulgences,” *Catholic Online*, Accessed 4/16/2020. <https://www.catholic.org/prayers/indulgce.php>.

Partial Indulgence, *Enchiridion Indulgentiarum*, 1968 edition, no. 50, New American Bible St. Joseph Edition © 1970 by the Confraternity of Christian Doctrine, page 4.

72. Pontiff Benedict XVI, “Quotes on Purgatory,” *AZ QUOTES*, Accessed 3/18/2020. <https://www.azquotes.com/quote/1079285>.

73. Priest Stinson, “(Priest) Stinson’s Letter for All Souls Day 2019,” *FSSP, Fraternity Society of St. Peter*, Accessed 2/16/2020, <https://fssp.com/novenas/fr-stinsons-letter-for-all-souls-day-2019/>.

74. Rev. Lawrence G. Lovasik, S.V.D., *My First Catechism, Divine Word Missionary*, © 1983 by Catholic Book Publishing Corp., N.J., book No. 382, page 23.

75. Paul Todd, “Catholic Infallibility,” Readers Write column, *The Daily Standard*, Celina Ohio, April 14, 1982.

76. Bishop Thomas J. Welsh, “Newsletter: Catholic Communicator,” *The Catholic Home Study Institute*, 10<sup>th</sup> Anniversary Issue, Fall 1993, Vol. IX, No. 2, 1.

77. Adrian Rodgers “You’re Too Late!” LWF Devotional, email, Wednesday, May 22, 2013.

78. Eric Groski, AP Religion Writer, “Religious Americans: My faith isn’t the only way,” *The Daily Standard*, Celina, Ohio, July 25, 2008, 7B.

79. Troy Guy: “Know, Love, and DEFEND your Catholic Faith!” DiscoverHisChurch.com.

80. Paul Todd, “Life Without Meaning,” *The Daily Standard*, Celina Ohio; March 31, 1982.

81. Accessed 3/19/2020. [https://www.azquotes.com/author/14309-Billy\\_Sunday](https://www.azquotes.com/author/14309-Billy_Sunday)

82. Mike Spencer, “Oprah’s inconvenient truth,” *The Daily Standard*, Celina, Ohio, August 6, 2010, 9A.

83. Catholic Answers, “Cruise Catholic! Private Charter on the Rhine River” *Catholic Answers Magazine*, March–April 2020, Volume 30 | Number 2, back cover.

84. Jimmy Akin 3-CD Audio Set, “CATHOLIC FROM THE GET-GO,” *Catholic Answers* Press.
85. Troy L. Guy, “Discover His Church,” *Discover His Church*, Accessed 3/15/2020. [discoverhischurch.com/donate/](http://discoverhischurch.com/donate/).
86. Sam Guzman, “Spiritual Weapons: The St. Benedict Medal,” *Catholic Exchange*, July 12, 2017. Accessed 3/20/2020. <https://catholicexchange.com/spiritual-weapons-st-benedict-medal-2>.
87. Sam Guzman, “Spiritual Weapons: The Red Scapular,” *The Catholic Gentleman*, 2013. Accessed 3/20/2020. <https://www.catholicgentleman.net/2013/09/spiritual-weapons-the-red-scapular/>.
88. Holly Ordway. “The Language of Symbols.” *Catholic Answers*, January-February 2018, 11, 12–15. Accessed 2/29/2020. <https://www.catholic.com/magazine/print-edition/the-language-of-symbols>.
89. Trent Horn, “At what age are children required to attend Mass?”, *Catholic Answers Magazine*, November–December 2018, Volume 28 | Number 5 | Page 45, Accessed 2/29/2020. <https://www.catholic.com/qa/are-there-any-guidelines-from-the-church-regarding-bringing-children-to-mass>.
90. [biblehub.com/greek/225.htm](http://biblehub.com/greek/225.htm).
91. <https://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/fable>.
92. [biblehub.com/greek/3454.htm](http://biblehub.com/greek/3454.htm).
93. [merriam-webster.com/dictionary/veneration#h1](http://merriam-webster.com/dictionary/veneration#h1).
94. Quotes on the Most Blessed Sacrament [therealpresence.org](http://therealpresence.org).
95. Posted, Friday May 3, 2019, *The Daily Standard*, Our Local Newspaper.
96. Posted, April 12, 2013, *The Daily Standard*.
97. Posted March 9, 2018, *The Daily Standard*.
98. Posted, July 13, 2018, *The Daily Standard*.

99. Jonathan Jones, “From St. Peter’s bones to severed heads: Christian relics on display,”

*The Guardian*, November 18, 2013. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.theguardian.com/artanddesign/jonathanjonesblog/2013/nov/18/st-peters-bones-christian-relics>.

100. William Saunders, “Why do we venerate relics?” *Arlington Catholic Herald*. Accessed 2/21/2020. [apologeticacatolica.org/in/reliquias/relic05.html](http://apologeticacatolica.org/in/reliquias/relic05.html).

Rev. Charles Mangan, “Church Teaching on Relics,” *CERC*, Accessed 4/18/2020. <https://www.catholiceducation.org/en/culture/catholic-contributions/church-teaching-on-relics.html>.

101. Al Kresta, “What Are Relics and Why Are They Important?” *Legatus Magazine*, Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://legatus.org/relics-important/>.

102. “Eucharistic Quotes – Page 3,” *AZ QUOTES*, Accessed 4/18/2020. <https://www.azquotes.com/quotes/topics/eucharistic.html?p=3>.

103. “Daily Catholic Mass – 2017-08-13 – Fr. Joseph,” *Youtube*, August 13, 2017. Accessed 4/18/2020. <https://youtu.be/jqwkYnCd0wc>.

104. Francis Phillips, “The teen who dedicated his life to eucharistic miracles,” *Catholic Herald*, October 16, 2017. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://catholicherald.co.uk/the-teen-who-dedicated-his-life-to-eucharistic-miracles/>.

The Miracle of Lanciano, Wikimedia Commons, Accessed 3/19/2020. [https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/Category:Eucharistic\\_Miracle\\_of\\_Lanciano](https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/Category:Eucharistic_Miracle_of_Lanciano).

Antonia Salzano Acutis, “Children’s Eucharist Video,” *Real Presence Eucharistic Education and Adoration Association*, Accessed 3/24/2020. [www.therealpresence.org/eucharst/mir/a3.html](http://www.therealpresence.org/eucharst/mir/a3.html).

Kathleen N. Hattrup “Official Website of the Carlo Acutis Association” Accessed 4/18/2020. <https://www.carloacutis-en.org>.

105. Hannah Perry, “Catholic Diocese investigate ‘bleeding’ communion wafer being hailed as miracle by believers in Utah,” *Daily Mail*, 11/29/2015, update 11/30/2015. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3338563/Catholic-Diocese-inestigate-bleeding-communion-wafer-hailed-miricle-Utah-church.html>.

106. Therealpresence.org, “Eucharistic Miracles,” *Real Presence Eucharistic Education and Adoration Association*, Accessed 3/24/2020. [www.therealpresence.org/eucharst/mir/a3.html](http://www.therealpresence.org/eucharst/mir/a3.html).
107. Father John A. Hardon S.J., “The Eucharist and Sanctity,” *CERC, Catholic Education Resource Center*, Accessed 3/24/2020. <https://www.catholiceducation.org/en/culture/catholic-contributions/the-eucharist-and-sanctity.html>.
108. Patrick J. Buechi, “Corpus Christi procession fills the Streets of Buffalo’s East Side,” *Western New York Catholic*, June 5, 2018. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.wnycatholic.org/news/article/featured/2018/06/05/103138/corpus-christi-procession-fills-the-streets-of-buffalos-east-side>.
109. Accessed 5/17/2020. [https://madisondiocese.org/documents/2016/12/Bulletin%20Quotes Eucharist.pdf](https://madisondiocese.org/documents/2016/12/Bulletin%20Quotes%20Eucharist.pdf).
110. *The Daily Standard*, Celina, Ohio, September 17, 2010.
111. Orlando Diocese, “Corpus Christi Procession 2014,” June 22, 2014. Accessed 3/22/2020. [https://video.search.yahoo.com/yhs/search?fr=yhs-symantec-ext\\_safe&hsimp=yhs-safe&hspart=symantec&p=video+monstrance+processions+youtube#id=4&vid=f522abfd40db1b09a6a7538f86133e3e&action=view](https://video.search.yahoo.com/yhs/search?fr=yhs-symantec-ext_safe&hsimp=yhs-safe&hspart=symantec&p=video+monstrance+processions+youtube#id=4&vid=f522abfd40db1b09a6a7538f86133e3e&action=view).
112. Raymond Leo Cardinal Burke, “The Real Presence of Christ in the Eucharist,” *Real Presence Eucharistic Education and Adoration Association*, Accessed 4/19/2020. [www.therealpresence.org](http://www.therealpresence.org). “Quotes on the Most Blessed Sacrament” Accessed 4/19/2020. <http://www.therealpresence.org/eucharst/tes/a7.html>.
113. Priest J. Bacchiarello, S.D.B., “Forty Dreams of St. John Bosco,” *GetFed, blog*, [Marys-touch.com/Saints/bosco.htm](http://Marys-touch.com/Saints/bosco.htm). Accessed 3/20/2020. <https://www.getfed.com/vision-john-bosco-two-columns-mary-eucharist-5978>.
- St. John Bosco’s dream of two pillars. Accessed 3/20/2020. <https://video.search.yahoo.com>. Accessed 3/20/2020. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3v70du9hJKc>.

114. Jeannie Ewing, *This Is the Most Complete List of Marian Apparitions*, The Mystical Humanity of Christ Publishing, Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.coraevans.com/blog/article/this-is-the-most-complete-list-of-marian-apparitions>.
115. Claire Dwyer, *National Catholic Register*, June 9, 2019; June 16, 2019. Accessed 3/24/2020. <https://www.ncregister.com/daily-news/two-fathers-who-raised-holy-men>.
116. Adrian Rodgers, “Three Steps to Gain and Celebrate Victory,” *LWF: On Mission*, MAR | APR 2020, Vol. 27, No. 2, back cover.
117. The Family of Mary, “Welcome to the Lady of All Nations Website of the Family of Mary,” *The Lady of All Nations*, Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.de-vrouwe.info/en/>. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.de-vrouwe.info/de>.
118. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.devrouwevanallevolkeren.nl/en/the-title-the-lady-of-all-nations/>.
119. Love Worth Finding Ministries with Adrian Rodgers, *Daily Devotional*, May 23, 2013.
120. World Apostolate of Fatima, USA, “Excitement Builds: Our Lady of Fatima Tours America,” *The Pontifical Council for the Laity*, Yahoo, Youtube.com, 2016, 1:14 min. Accessed 4/27/2020. [https://video.search.yahoo.com/yhs/search?fr=yhs-synantec-ext\\_safe&hsimp=yhs-ext\\_safe&hspart=symantec&p=fatima+centennial+us+tour+for+peace&guce\\_r\\_e\\_f\\_e\\_r\\_r\\_e\\_r=aHR0cHM6Y2WRL1by5zZWFFyY2g\\_Zn19eWhzLXN5BW FudGVjLWV4dF9zYWZUMhzaW1wPXlocy1leHRfc2FmZSZoc3BhcnQ9c3ltYW50ZWMMcD1mYXRpbWErY2VudGVubmlhbCt1cy](https://video.search.yahoo.com/yhs/search?fr=yhs-synantec-ext_safe&hsimp=yhs-ext_safe&hspart=symantec&p=fatima+centennial+us+tour+for+peace&guce_r_e_f_e_r_r_e_r=aHR0cHM6Y2WRL1by5zZWFFyY2g_Zn19eWhzLXN5BW FudGVjLWV4dF9zYWZUMhzaW1wPXlocy1leHRfc2FmZSZoc3BhcnQ9c3ltYW50ZWMMcD1mYXRpbWErY2VudGVubmlhbCt1cy).
- Patrick Sabat, Program Director, “Fatima Tour for Peace,” *World Apostolate of Fatima, USA—Our Lady’s Blue Army*, Accessed 4/27/2020. <https://www.fatimatourforpeace.com/the-statue/>.
121. Patrick Sabat, Program Director, “The Message of Fatima,” *Pilgrim Fatima USA*, Accessed 4/26/2020. <https://www.pilgrimfatimausa.com/>.

ChurchPOP Editor, “7 Powerful Messages from Our Lady of Fatima: ‘The Grace of God Will Be Your Comfort,” *ChurchPOP*, May 13, 2019. Accessed 4/27/2020.

“My Immaculate Heart will be Your Refuge—Our Lady of Knock,” *Sensus Fidelium*, Aug. 24, 2017, 13 min. Accessed 4/27/2020. [www.youtube.com/watch?v=SUtGHgbhX\\_8](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SUtGHgbhX_8).

122. *Lima News*, June 29, 1964.

“Our Lady of Fatima,” *Historical Marker Project*, Accessed 5/17/2020. [https://historicalmarkerproject.com/markers/HM1YU5\\_our-lady-of-fatima\\_Russels-Point-OH.html](https://historicalmarkerproject.com/markers/HM1YU5_our-lady-of-fatima_Russels-Point-OH.html).

Greg Hartman, “A Picture Says a Thousand Words: Our Lady of Fatima Shrine Russels Point Ohio,” *The Catholic Telegraph*, August 14, 2018. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://www.thecatholictelegraph.com/a-picture-says-a-thousand-word-our-lady-of-fatima-shrine-russels-point-ohio/53254>.

123. Bro. Michael of the Blessed Trinity, *The Whole Truth About Fatima*, vol. 3 (Buffalo, NY: Immaculate Heart Publications, 1990).

Dominican Fathers of Ayrille, *The Origin of the Rosary*, Accessed 3/10/2020. <https://www.olrl.org/sacramental/rosary.shtml>.

124. America Needs Fatima | ANF Site Articles, 10/10/2019, Accessed 3/22/2020. <https://www.americanneedsfatima.org>.

125. Helen Lemmel. (1922). “Turn Your Eyes upon Jesus,” *hymnal.net*.

126. “25 Quotes from St. John Vianney,” *Saint Therese*, #10., Accessed 3/19/2020. <http://www.sainttherese.com/25-quotes-from-st-john-vianney/>.

127. St. Anthony Maria Claret, quote, “Wherever he goes,” *The America Needs Fatima Blog*, October 24, 2019. Accessed 3/19/2020. <https://america-needs-fatima.blogspot.com/2018/10/wherever-he-goes.html>.

128. Marge Fenelon, “Miracles Still reported at the Site of the First Marian Apparition in the U.S.” *National Catholic Register*, July 3, 2017. Accessed 4/20/2020. <https://www.ncregister.com/blog/mfenelon/a-visit-to-the-first-marian-apparition-site-in-the-u.s.>

129. Accessed 4/20/2020. <https://championshrine.org/>.
130. “Blessing of the Backpacks,” *The Daily Standard*, Celina Ohio, August 21, 2018.
131. Priest William Saunders, “Holy Water,” *Catholic Education Resource Center/ Arlington Catholic Herald*, 2003. Accessed 3/20/2020. <https://www.catholiceducation.org/en/culture/catholic-contributions/holy-water.html>.
132. Sam Guzman, “Spiritual Weapons: Holy Water,” *The Catholic Gentleman*, 2013, 12. Accessed 3/20/20. <https://www.catholicgentleman.net/2013/12/spiritual-weapons-holy-water/>.
133. ChurchPOP Editor, “The Spiritual Power of Holy Water: 6 Effects Every Catholic Should Know,” *ChurchPOP*, November 20, 2017. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://churchpop.com/2017/11/20/the-spiritual-power-of-holy-water-6-effects-every-catholic-should-know/>.
134. Adrian Rodgers, “Three Steps to Gain and Celebrate Victory,” *LWF: On Mission*, MAR | APR 2020, Vol. 27, No. 2, back cover.
135. Catholic Online, “When Using Holy Water,” *Catholic Online*, Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://www.catholic.org/prayers/prayer.php?p=20>.
136. ChurchPOP Editor, “Priest Exorcizes Las Vegas Shooter’s Hotel Room with Holy Water After Feeling Evil Presence,” *ChurchPOP*, October 26, 2017. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://churchpop.com/2017/10/26/priest-exorcizes-las-vegas-shooters-room-holy-water/>.
137. ChurchPOP Editor, “Orthodox Priest Cleanses His City’s Downtown with Holy Water after LGBT Parade,” *ChurchPOP*, August 22, 2018. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://churchpop.com/2018/08/22/orthodox-priest-cleanses-his-citys-downtown-with-holy-water-after-lgbt-parade-pictures-inside/>.
138. ChurchPOP Editor, “Bishop to Exorcise Entire City from Helicopter with Holy Water: ‘We Have to Get Rid of the Devil,’” “Update: Bishop Will Not Exorcise City Via Helicopter, Will Process and Bless with Fire Truck,” *ChurchPOP*, July 10, 2019. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://churchpop.com/2019/07/10/bishop-to-exorcise-entire-city-with-holy-water-from-helicopter-we-have-to-get-rid-of-the-devil/>.

139. Pat, “Letter from a Former Nun,” *Lighthouse Trails Research Project*, February 26, 2019. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://www.Lighthouse Trails Research.com/newsletters/2019/newsletter20190226.htm#article10>.
140. Larry Tomczak. *Clap your hands! A Young Catholic Encounters Christ*. Plainfield: Logos International, 1973. Print 134–136 Catholic Approved by: Nihil Obstat: Rev Micheal J. Arrowsmith, S.T.L. Censor Deputatus; Imprimatur: The Most Reverend William W. Baum, S.T.D. Archbishop of Washington. October 6, 1973 ... official declaration that a book ... is free of doctrinal or moral error. No implication is contained therein that those who have granted ... agree with the content, or statements expressed. Cath. Conf. Edition of the Bible (used in *Clap Your Hands!*) pp. 134–136. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://www.larrytomczak.com/oops-pope-francis-did-it-again/>.
141. Trent Horn, “Answers: What do Muslims believe about the crucifixion of Jesus?” *Catholic Answers Magazine*, Volume 28, Number 5, November–December 2018, 45.
142. Scott and Kimberly Hahn, Quoted from Catholic Answers Book Description, *Rome Sweet Home*, Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://shop.catholic.com/rome-sweet-home/>.
143. Derek Rotty, “An Invitation to Conversion,” *A Life of Conversion, Meeting Christ in the Gospels*. 2017, pages 10–13. Accessed 3/1/2020. [https://thelifeofvirtue.files.wordpress.com/2019/09/1028875\\_t2017firstchapter\\_authorcopy.pdf](https://thelifeofvirtue.files.wordpress.com/2019/09/1028875_t2017firstchapter_authorcopy.pdf). “Derek Rotty, A Life of Conversion & the gospels,” *The Kyle Heimann Show, Headliner.app*, Accessed 3/1/2020. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=aoSctB3ulWo>.
144. Derek Rotty, “Seeking truth, goodness, & beauty,” Accessed 3/3/2020. <https://derekrotty.com/story/>.
145. ChurchPOP Editor, “Nun Who Threw First Pitch: ‘My Dream-is to Start a Revival – We All Have Something to Offer the World,’” *ChurchPOP*, July 16, 2019. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://churchpop.com/2019/07/16/nun-who-threw-first-pitch-my-dream-is-to-start-a-revival-we-all-have-something-to-offer-the-world/>.
146. Patrick J. Buechi, “Testimony of Helen Buscarino,” *WNY Catholic*, December 2018. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://www.wnycatholic.org/news/article/featured/2018/12/07/103420/sister-mary-has-a-long-ministry-of-caring-for-people>.



147. Sara and Justin Kraft, “Here are 10 of the Most Unexpected Catholic Conversion Stories,” *The Mystical Humanity of Christ Publishing, Cora Evans*,” Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://www.coraevans.com/blog/article/here-are-10-of-the-most-unexpected-catholic-conversion-stories>.
148. Marcus C. Grodi, “Ministry Solicitation Letter,” *Coming Home Network International*, January 2020, Accessed 3/16/2020. <https://community.chnetwork.org>.
149. Jules Gomes, “Cardinal tells Catholics who protest Pope to become Protestants,” *Church Militant*, 1/27/2020. Accessed 4/10/2020. <https://www.churchmilitant.com/news/article/catholic-protesting-pope-francis-can-join-protestantism-says-cardinal>.
150. Wiki User, “Attendance at mass each Sunday is a requirement of Catholics?” *Answers*, May 02, 2017. Accessed 2/22/2020. <https://www.answers.com/Q/Attendance+at+mass+each+sunday+is+a+requirement+of+catholics>.
151. Priest Joe Scott, “Where in the Bible does it require weekly attending of the Mass?” *Busted Halo*, May 18, 2008. Accessed 2/21/2020. <https://bustedhalo.com/questionbox/where-in-the-bible-does-it-require-weekly-attending-of-the-mass>.
152. Rodgers, Adrian, “Three Steps to Gain and Celebrate Victory,” *LWF: On Mission*, MAR | APR 2020, Vol. 27, No. 2, back cover. Accessed 3/16/2020. <https://www.lwf.org/articles/how-to-gain-and-celebrate-victory-article>.



## IMAGE BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Westgerdes, Gary. Bumper Sticker, 1 Corinthians 2:9.
2. Westgerdes, Gary. First Communion, age seven.
3. Westgerdes, Gary. Home from Navy Boot Camp, Naval Station Great Lakes.
4. Westgerdes, Gary. Gary and Victoria, Wedding Day, July 27, 1985.
5. Westgerdes, Gary, College Graduation, Fort Wayne IN, Summit Christian College/  
Taylor University IN.
6. Bednarek, Michal, PHOTOCREO/Shutterstock.com, a globe ball depicting various  
people, places, objects, and concepts.
7. BOOCYS/Shutterstock.com, a Catholic icon, the crucifix.
8. Rossi, Giorgio/Shutterstock.com, a priest in adoration before the Blessed Sacrament.
9. Marty, Benny/Shutterstock.com, the Giant rosary located in Fatima Portugal at the  
Basilica of Our Lady of Fatima.
10. Lenush/Shutterstock.com, St. Peter's chair seen in the Vatican.
11. ultramansk/Shutterstock.com, Saint Peter's Basilica.
12. wideonet/Shutterstock.com, a priest elevating the host for consecration during mass.
13. photomatz/Shutterstock.com, the interior of a Catholic Church.
14. Thoom/Shutterstock.com, an altar prepared for mass.
15. mavo/Shutterstock.com, white snow.

16. Azindianlany/Shutterstock.com, the cross of faith.
17. wideonet/Shutterstock.com, a Priest lifts the wine and host during mass.
18. pointbreak/Shutterstock.com, a Catholic tabernacle were after mass the remaining host are kept.
19. Almeida, Sidney de/Shutterstock.com, an Ostensory/Monstrance with the Blessed Sacrament being displayed for adoration.
20. TERE, MARI/Shutterstock.com, a golden monstrance and a crucifix representing the two but united sacrifices of Jesus.
21. dominiktudos/Shutterstock.com, a Catholic altar with bread and wine.
22. wideonet/Shutterstock.com, a Priest elevating the chalice of wine for consecration.
23. Almeida, Sidney de/Shutterstock.com, the Adoration of Christ in the Eucharist.
24. Almeida, Sidney de/Shutterstock.com, Jesus during a Eucharistic Holy Hour, celebrating Corpus.
25. Costa, Paolo/Shutterstock.com, lit candles signifying prayer.
26. Karanitsch, T./Shutterstock.com, carved figures from wood depicting the cleansing done in purgatory.
27. Athletic, Zvonimir/Shutterstock.com, a view of purgatory.
28. Bryant, Neal/Shutterstock.com, purgatory pictured as easier than originally thought.
29. StockPhotosArt/Shutterstock.com, a rosary with the bible which depicts the Catholic truth that scripture and tradition are equal.
30. Sedmakova, Renata/Shutterstock.com, a Catholic Church altar where mass is celebrated with Mary looking on.
31. Shachar, Dan/Shutterstock.com, a relic of St. Martianne's skull.
32. Bilderstoeckchen/Shutterstock.com, a Eucharistic procession celebrating Corpus Christi in Cologne.

33. GOLFX/Shutterstock.com, a statue of the Blessed Virgin Mary.
  34. Immaculate/Shutterstock.com, a statue of Our Lady of Fatima, with a golden crown.
  35. Immaculate/Shutterstock.com, a statue of Our Lady of Mt. Carmel.
  36. CURAphotography/Shutterstock.com, a statue of the Blessed Virgin Mary with a crown of stars.
  37. i7do/Shutterstock.com, a statue of the Blessed Virgin Mary, in Chanthaburi, Thailand.
  38. Perna, Ricardo/Shutterstock.com, The official statue of Our Lady of Fatima.
  39. Marty, Benny/Shutterstock.com, the 100<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the apparitions of the Virgin Mary in Fatima Portugal.
  40. Westgerdes, Gary. Quote from, Fatima Centennial U.S. Tour for Peace, back/page 4.
  41. Westgerdes, Gary. Front of Brochure, Fatima Centennial U.S. Tour for Peace.
  42. Westgerdes, Gary. Our Lady of Fatima, Our Lady of Fatima Shrine, Indian Lake, Russells Point, Ohio. Built in 1964, the 19'6" statue was sculpted and then cast out of fiberglass at the behest of George B. Quatman.
  43. Scatena, Francesco/Shutterstock.com, an Italian Church's inlaid marble holy water font.
  44. Westgerdes, Gary. Holy water font with Sacred Heart of Jesus.
  45. Westgerdes, Gary. Clap Your Hands! A Young Catholic Encounters Christ, Larry Tomczak.
  46. Westgerdes, Gary. Letter from Coming Home Network International, Marcus C. Grodi, January 2020.
  47. Westgerdes, Gary. Gary and Victoria Westgerdes, 2019.
- Front Cover. McIntosh, David/Shutterstock.com, a tomb in Nazareth.
- Back Cover. Lindsay Kaye Photography, Head Shot, Gary Westgerdes.

